Generation 1

 Mark Andrew Jumper (son of Andrew Albert Jumper and Elizabeth Anne Sharpe) was born on May 01, 1954 in Austin, Travis County, Texas, Seaton Hospital at its former location in the 2600 block of Rio Grande. He married Ginger Lou Jones (daughter of Jones) on Nov 23, 1991 in Clayton, Saint Louis County, Missouri, Central Presbyterian Church..She was born on Dec 23, 1958 in Orlando, Florida. She was born on Dec 23, 1958 in Orlando, Florida.

Notes for Mark Andrew Jumper:

Mark Andrew Jumper was born in the same Austin hospital as was his first cousin, Martha Lynne Ehlers. It was just across the street from where I later lived a few years later in a rooming house while I was a student at the University of Texas. Actually that rooming house was the home in which my brother-in-law, Victor (Vic) Marcus Ehlers, Jr. was raised, and his widowed mother still lived there as my landlady in my college days. From 1959 till 1961, I paid \$25 per month to have that upstairs bedroom as home, along with two other guys in other bedrooms.

Mark learned to play the violin in his grammar school days, but he never fiddled around with it much after that. He ultimately was the best bow for Ginger, his future wife, and he really did not fiddle around too much.

His secondary education was in Saint Louis County, Missouri. He lost his mother to cancer while he was in college.

After graduating from Oral Roberts University (Tulsa, Oklahoma) and Columbia Theological Seminary (Decatur, Georgia - a Presbyterian institution), he was pastor of a Presbyterian Church in Bay Saint Louis, Mississippi, down on the Gulf Coast. Subsequently, he entered the Chaplaincy in the United States Navy. He was based in a number of places in the Pacific and in the United States.

A hobby of his, developed in his military years, was sky diving. He broke a hip (or some important bone) in a fall once, but otherwise came through the military life unscathed.

Mark excelled as a father (he had to, with all those children). His skills as a clergyman became recognized as he grew and honed these skills in the ministry. In the steps of his father, he was a good and strong preacher. One of his years in the military, he was acclaimed the top Chaplain for the year! A practice he followed with his seven children was to have a private breakfast out at a nice place for each of their birthdays. He was good at developing ways like that to be a good father.

Thought his military assignments kept Mark living far and wide across the nation and the world, he did a good job of keeping in touch with our part of the family, for which we always were appreciative. In April 2006, he paid a visit to Peter, his brother, in Carrollton, Texas, near where we live (about 60 miles away). So, we had occasion for Suzanne and I, along with our son, Taylor, to visit in the home of Peter and Nancy in Carrollton. Later, Mark and Nancy came out to our little ranch house for an evening of really good family catching up while Peter had to head off to San Antonio for his military duty.

At this stage of life, Mark was about to retire from the Navy after 24years (20 years active duty and four years reserve duty). He was in the process of seeking a call to serve an Evangelical Presbyterian Church. At this time, he was concluding his military career as the Commander in charge of Chaplains at the Coast Guard Academy in Connecticut.

Sometime in the 1995 - 1997 era (I really forget when), Mark received recognition in being nominated for Navy Chaplain of the Year (nominated from 12 chaplains in chaplaincy, one of 12 nominees from about 1,000 Navy chaplains). Well, I think you can see that we can feel proud and blessed to have a family member recognized for such good work in an

organization as important as the United States Navy Chaplaincy.

Mark's description of his work toward the end of his career: "I was a Staff Chaplain there (US Coast Guard Academy), and also the Protestant Pastor of the U.S. Coast Guard Memorial Chapel. That assignment was from January 2004 through September 2005. Since October 2005, I have been a Staff Chaplain and Special Projects Officer at the Naval Chaplains School, Newport, Rhode Island."

Mark left some material for me about his history that had been composed in this process of various church committees interviewing him, and I lay out here his composition of his history in the Presbyterian church. I quote it word for word:

"Baptized by maternal grandfather, the Rev. Dwight A. Sharpe (PCUS) at Christ Presbyterian Church (PCUS), Houston, Texas, 1954 (Brazos Presbytery). Father, the Rev. Andrew A. Jumper, had just graduated from Austin PresbyterianTheological Seminary (PCUS) and was the newly ordained pastor of that church1962-1970. Confirmed, 1967. Attended Presbytery and Synod camps in Texas and New Mexico, and Montreat (NC) youth conference.

"Member, Central Presbyterian Church (PCUS), St. Louis, Missouri,1970-1982. Attended Presbytery camps in Missouri, and Montreat youth conferences.

"(Student, University of Missouri, Columbia, 1972-1973)

"Came under care of Southeast Missouri Presbytery (PCUS) as a candidate for the Gospel ministry, Spring 1973. Advisors: AndrewJumper, 1973-1980 and Bill Flannagan, 1980-1982.

"Submitted term paper, "Politics in the Southern Presbyterian Church" for political science class at the University of Missouri, Columbia,Spring 1973.

"Attended 1973 PCUS General Assembly, Fort Worth, Texas, as an observer.

"Served on Lay Renewal Mission at First Presbyterian Church (PCUS), Osceola, Arkansas, Summer 1973 (Bob Fenn, Coordinator).

"(Student, Oral Roberts University, 1973-1978; Bachelor of Arts, History, 1978)

"Member, Presbyterian Charismatic Communion (PCC) (later Presbyterian and Reformed Renewal Ministries International [PRRMI]), 1974-1990.

"Affiliate Member, First Presbyterian Church (UPCUSA), Tulsa,Oklahoma, 1973-1974 (Bill Wiseman, Pastor).

"Affiliate Member, John Knox Presbyterian Church (UPCUSA), Tulsa,Oklahoma, 1974-1975 (Scottie Griffin, Pastor). Taught college SundaySchool class.

"Youth Pastor, Westminster Presbyterian Church (PCUS), Cape Girardeau, Missouri, Summer 1975 (Bill McCutchen, Pastor).

"Youth Advisory Participant, 1975 PCUS General Assembly, Charlotte,North Carolina. Elected Chairperson of Youth Caucus, addressed Assembly, and led closing prayer for an Assembly session.

"Participant, Christ Presbyterian Church (RPCES), Tulsa, Oklahoma,1975-1977 (Bob Petterson, Pastor).

"Intern Pastor, Potosi Presbyterian Church (PCUS), Potosi, Missouri, Summer 1976.

"Represented Covenant Fellowship of Presbyterians working with YouthAdvisory Participants at 1976 PCUS General Assembly, Tuscaloosa, Alabama.

"Named by Moderator Jules Spach to serve on PCUS General Assembly AdInterim Committee on the Church and Higher Education, Atlanta,Georgia, 1976-1977.

"(Worked at Mallinckrodt Pharmeceuticals, St. Louis, Missouri, Winter/Spring 1977. Worked selling books door to door, NorthwestGeorgia, living in Bremen, Summer 1977.)

"Participant, Chapel Woods Presbyterian Church (PCUS), Decatur, Georgia, Summer 1977 (Chuck McGowan, Pastor).

"(Returned to ORU, Fall 1977.)

"Submitted senior thesis for history major, "Presbyterians North andSouth" (addressing history, process and prospects of reunion) at Oral Roberts University, December 1977.

"Enrolled Columbia Theological Seminary (PCUS), Decatur, Georgia, February 1978.

"Affiliate Member, First Presbyterian Church (PCUS), Atlanta, Georgia,1978-1982 (Paul Eckel, Pastor). Participant in singles ministry.Member, choir. Occasional supply teaching Sunday School and preaching at weekday services.

"Youth Pastor, Westminster Presbyterian Church (PCUS), Hattiesburg, Mississippi, Summer 1978 (John Dudley, Pastor).

"Youth Pastor, First Presbyterian Church (PCUS), Cedartown, Georgia,1979 -1980 (Sam Harris, Pastor).

"Sported Georgia automobile license tag, "PRESBY", 1979-1982.

"Preached at various PCUS churches (and one EPC (Rome) in Georgia, 1980-1982.

"Editor, The Seminary Cistern, an Evangelical magazine forPresbyterian seminarians, sponsored by the Covenant Fellowship ofPresbyterians and producing one issue, 1980.

"(Left seminary campus for one year of supervised ministry credits, 1980-1981.)

Intern Pastor, Georgetown Presbyterian Church (PCUS), Savannah, Georgia, Summer 1980.

"Intern Pastor for Pineville Presbyterian Church (PCUS), Pass Christian, Mississippi and also for Diamondhead Community Church (PCUS) (new church development), Bay St. Louis, Mississippi, 1980 - 1981(Dwynn Mounger, Advisor). Pineville church built new fellowship hall,Winter 1981. Diamondhead church purchased land, Spring 1981; was chartered with 67 members and built its first building, Fall 1981.

"(Returned to Columbia Theological Seminary, Fall 1981.)

"Endorsed by Presbyterian Council for Chaplains to serve as a Navy Chaplain, Fall 1981.

"Received Master of Divinity, Columbia Theological Seminary (PCUS), May 1982.

"Ordained by South Mississippi Presbytery (PCUS), June 1982.

"Pastor, Diamondhead Community Church (PCUS, then PCUSA), Bay St.Louis, Mississippi, 1982-1985. Exceeded 100 members in 1985.

"Participant at First Presbyterian Church (UPCUSA), Newport, Rhodelsland during Navy Chaplains School, Summer 1982 (Tyler Johnson,Pastor).

"Served in South Mississippi Presbytery (PCUS then PCUSA) as follows:

"Preached and taught in various congregations.

"Member and sometime Clerk, Special Administrative Commission onWithdrawing Churches, 1983. Drew the unfortunate duty of debating R.C. Sproul (he won)!

"Chairman, Special Disciplinary Committee (re. Helena Presbyterian Church), 1983.

"Recording Clerk for Presbytery, 1984-1985.

"Moderator, Committee on National and International Mission, 1984-1985.

"Moderator, PCA Response Committee (re. McComb, Mississippi), 1985.

"(Entered active duty service as a Naval chaplain, September 1985. Served with the Third Marine Division, Okinawa, Japan, 1985-1986.)

"Enjoyed the fellowship of South Korean Presbyterians: at Young Nak Presbyterian Church (the world's largest Presbyterian congregation) in Seoul, 1985; and in the countryside, 1986.

"Called and convened fellowship meeting of about a dozen Presbyterian chaplains and missionaries on Okinawa--whimsically named the "Presbytery of Okinawa"--1986.

"(Assigned to Naval Hospital, Bethesda, Maryland, 1986-1988.)

"Participant, National Presbyterian Church (PCUSA), Washington, DC,1986-1988 (Louis Evans, Jr., Pastor).

"Corresponding Member, National Capital Presbytery (PCUSA), 1986-1988.Preached at various PCUSA congregations in Maryland and Virginia.

"Participant, Fourth Presbyterian Church (EPC), Bethesda, Maryland,1986-1988 (Rob Norris, Pastor). Participant in singles ministry.Chairman, Refugee Resettlement Committee, 1987-1988.

"(Assigned to Navy Family Service Center, then Naval Air Station, Agana, Guam, 1988-1990.)

"Enjoyed fellowship with pastor and people of Faith ReformedPresbyterian Church (CRC), Agana, Guam, 1988-1990 (Neil Culbertson, Pastor).

"Taught youth Confirmation course for the Protestant Congregation atthe Chapel of the Good Shepherd, NAS Agana, Guam. The youth received membership in National Presbyterian Church (PCUSA), Washington, DC.

"(Assigned to USS LEYTE GULF (CG 55), home ported in Mayport, Florida,1990-1993, including service in Operations Desert Shield and Desert Storm.)

"Participant, Highlands Presbyterian Church (PCUSA), Jacksonville, Florida, 1990-1992 (Don Harris, Pastor). Member, choir.

"Enjoyed fellowship of French Reformed believers in Marseilles, France, Spring 1991.

"Addressed Presbyterian Chaplains Retreat re: experiences in Operations Desert Shield and Desert Storm, Golden, Colorado, Summer 1991. Informed Endorser of possible transfer to EPC.

"Married the former Ginger Lou Jones at Central Presbyterian Church (EPC), St. Louis, Missouri, November 1991. Officiants, Andrew Jumper (EPC), John Pope (PCUSA) and Bill Gothard (Bible Church). Ginger joined Central the day after our wedding and maintains her permanent membership with that congregation during our nomadic military service.

"Participant, Ponte Vedra Presbyterian Church (PCA), Ponte Vedra, Florida, 1992-1993 (A. B. Scott, Pastor).

"Daughter Christina Joy baptized by John Pope (PCUSA) on USS LEYTEGULF (CG 55) in Mayport, Florida, 1992.

"Transferred my ordination to the Evangelical Presbyterian Church(Florida Presbytery) from the Presbyterian Church (U.S.A.)(Mississippi Presbytery), May 1993.

"(Assigned to Chaplain Advanced Course in Newport, Rhode Island, 1993-1994.)

"Preached at CRC churches in Connecticut and Massachusetts, and a PCUSA church in Providence, Rhode Island, 1993-1994.

"Son Andrew Albert II baptized by Tim Brewer (EPC) at CentralPresbyterian Church (EPC), St. Louis, Missouri, 1994 during that congregation's 150th anniversary celebration.

"Chairman of standing committee on Ministerial Vocations at 1994 EPCGeneral Assembly, Pompano Beach, Florida.

"(Assigned to Naval Air Station, Dallas, Texas and Naval Air Station Joint Reserve Base, Fort Worth, Texas, 1994-1997.)

"Transferred presbytery membership to Central South Presbytery (EPC),Fall 1994. Member, Ministerial Committee, 1995-1997 (Chairman Bob Petterson, then Sandy Wilson).

"Participant (evening services) and occasional preacher, Cross Pointe Community Church (EPC), Carrollton, Texas, 1994-1997 (Rhett Payne, Pastor).

"Daughter Caroline Grace baptized by Rhett Payne (EPC) at Cross Pointe Community Church (EPC), Carrollton, Texas, 1995.

"Son Jonathan Mark baptized by cousin Nancy Reeves (PCUSA) at the Chapel, Naval Air Station Joint Reserve Base, Fort Worth, Texas, 1996.

"Chairman, Chaplains Subcommittee and member, General AssemblyMinisterial Vocation Committee (EPC), Livonia, Michigan, 1996-2002(Bill Moore, Chairman). As the EPC's Assistant Endorser for Chaplains (under Endorser Ed Davis), addressed the General Assembly in 1996,1997 and 1999. Represented the EPC at the National Conference onMinistry to the Armed Forces (NCMAF) and the Endorsers Conference forVeterans Affairs Chaplaincy (ECVAC) in Washington, DC in 1997, 1998,1999, and 2000..

"Preacher, five-day Lay Renewal Mission, Trinity Presbyterian Church(EPC), Florence, South Carolina, November 1996 (Bob Fenn, Coordinator; Bill Meyer, Pastor). "(Assigned to Seventh Coast Guard District, Miami, Florida, 1997-2000.)

"Transferred presbytery membership to Florida Presbytery (EPC), Fall1997. Preached at several churches throughout the presbytery.

"Participant, First Presbyterian Church (EPC), Homestead, Florida,1997-2001 (Bob Hess, Pastor). Taught Sunday School (adult Bible survey course; youth Confirmation course) and preached on occasion.

"Attended dedication of the Andrew Jumper Graduate Theological Center(IPB) in the John Calvin Building at the Mackenzie Presbyterian Institute in San Paulo, Brazil, July 1998. My son, Andrew Albert Jumper II, namesake of my father, pulled the curtain from the name plaque as part of the inaugural ceremony.

"Son David Joseph baptized by Bob Hess (EPC) at First Presbyterian Church (EPC), Homestead, Florida, 1998.

"Elected by the Presbytery of Florida (EPC) to serve on the EPC General Assembly?s Ad Interim Committee dealing with the church's nature, mission and future, October 1999.

"Elected Moderator, the Presbytery of Florida (EPC), for a one-year term, October 1999.

"Daughter Bonnie Fay baptized by myself at First Presbyterian Church (EPC), Homestead, Florida, 2000.

"(Assigned as first Director of CREDO Center of Excellence, NavyRegion Northeast, Naval Submarine Base New London, Groton,Connecticut, 2001-2004.)

"Member, Presbytery of the East (EPC), 2001 - present.

"Member, Committee on Ministry, Class of 2007 (Chairman George Yates).

"Participant, St. Andrew Presbyterian Church (PCUSA), Groton, Connecticut, 2001-2004 (Mark Porizky, Pastor). Sang in choir, preached on occasion.

"Daughter Elizabeth Anne (named after my mother) baptized by Mark Porizky (PCUSA) at St. Andrew Presbyterian Church (PCUSA), Groton,Connecticut, 2002.

"Occasional attendance, Covenant Presbyterian Church (PCA), Ledyard, Connecticut, 2001 - present (Greg Pilato, Pastor). Preached on occasion.

"(Assigned to U.S. Coast Guard Academy, New London, Connecticut, 2004-2005.)

"Preached at Ward Evangelical Presbyterian Church (EPC) for Memorial Day weekend, 2003 and 2005.

"(Assigned to the Naval Chaplains School, Newport, Rhode Island, 2005-2006.)

"Our family has committed to be regular participants at CovenantPresbyterian Church (PCA), Ledyard, CT. We expect our children to be examined for Christian experience and received as associate members.

Notes for Ginger Lou Jones:

Ginger was a Florida girl. While in her 30's, she was the administrative assistant for Bill Gothard, a man who headed up a Christian teaching ministry through a series of seminars, typically in large auditoriums or sports stadiums. It was known as "Basic Youth Conflicts," and thousands of people would attend at a time, meeting in large convention centers and stadiums. She was doing this work when she and Mark met.

Ginger is an endless resource for creativity, and her small stature did not reflect the strength and stamina she had in being a marvelous wife and mother. She particularly excelled by home schooling their children. She has been an endless source of reference for our own daughter, Tiffany, the mother of five children whom she also is homeschooling.

Generation 2

- Andrew Albert Jumper (son of William David Jumper and Irma Belle Nason) was born on Sep 11, 1927 in Marks Quitman County, Mississippi. He died on May 28, 1992 in Chesterfield, Saint Louis County, Missouri. He married Elizabeth Anne Sharpe (daughter of Dwight Alfred Sharpe and Martha Dixon Chapman) on Aug 14, 1948 in Central Park Presbyterian Church, Houston, Harris County, Texas..
- 3. **Elizabeth Anne Sharpe** (daughter of Dwight Alfred Sharpe and Martha Dixon Chapman) was born on Aug 09, 1929 in Little Rock, Pulaski County, Arkansas. She died on Dec 28, 1973 in Saint Louis, Missouri.

Notes for Andrew Albert Jumper:

Andy lost his father to an automobile accident when Andy was only 8 months old. Andy and his brother, Bill, were raised by his mother and her second husband, Lawrence Owens, affectionately known to the family as "Daddy O." They lived in relative poverty during the 1930's, scratching out their living operating small county stores from place to place, beginning in Darling, Mississippi.

The 1930 US Census for Quitman County, Mississippi shows that Andy's widowed mother and his brother were in the household of Andy & Bill's Nason grand parents, Albert Lancaster Nason and IIa Bell Ramsey.

It is of interest to see that Andy's name in this 1930 US Census was Albert A. Jumper, which was what his mother says she named him. She addressed him as Albert, but he did not like that name, much preferring his middle name, Andrew, he liked being called Andy. He grew up having people call him Andy. It was to his great delight when he entered the United States Coast Guard when it was the first time for him ever to have his birth certificate requested, that his name had been recorded contrary to his Mother's wishes. He was officially Andrew Albert Jumper! Of course, in the military, they would permit use only of the first name to address the military personnel, which was great for him. However, his Mother called him Albert till the day she died!

After Andy's mom remarried, the family located in Parkin, Arkansas, where he finished high school, managing to be selected an all-state football player. Andy went to Mississippi State University on a football scholarship in 1943.

Bill, Andy's older brother, is a good story teller, and here is more of his telling to me in 2003:

"On a dreary, wet Sunday afternoon on December 7, 1941, Andy and I and about a dozen other town kids were down at the school football field playing a game of touch football (I was 15 and Andy was 13). My step father walked down and called all us kids over and told us about the report of the attack on Pearl Harbor, just in over the radio. Well, being country kids and knowing little of world affairs, we thought it was bad. But really, we had little idea

that our world was in for a big change that, at that moment, we could not foresee it's impact.

"In 1942 I (Bill) was in the 12th grade, and doing badly, as I was a poor student and really never applied myself. Most of my pals were a little older than me and were starting to be called up for military service. So, not wanting to miss out on the war, I joined the U. S.Navy in May 1943. That same summer my folks had a job opportunity in the Parkin, Arkansas area. It was a large country store owned by a large landholding company out of Chicago, Illinois. They moved there and were furnished a house in conjunction with the store. Andy went to Parkin High School. As well as being a good student, he was a great football player. In his senior year they won the state championship. He and a kid named John Hannah made all state awards. John Hannah went on to play for Arkansas University, made All American, was drafted by the Greenbay Packers, and made all pro several times. Andy was courted by a number of colleges and made recruiting trips to Kentucky, Arkansas, Ole Miss and Mississippi State. As it turned out, Mississippi State offered the best opportunity, which Andy accepted.

"Schools could get away with a lot of things back then, and, as long as it was not too overt, no one complained. For Andy, he was to get \$500 per year clothing allowance to be used at Bonds Clothing Store in Memphis, and five round trip bus tickets home. He had an on campus job that paid a stipend as well. Realizing he was about to be drafted, he joined the Coast Guard in 1945. At one point, he was stationed in New York City and I happened to be in at the Philadelphia Naval yard then. I caught the train and spent the weekend with him in New York City. Andy later went to Houston, and that's where he met Elizabeth.

"I remember during the time in 1947 that he was in Houston and the fertilizer ship blew in the harbor of the port of Texas City, killing over 100 and nearly blowing the entire port and town off the map. There was a long investigation by the U.S. Coast Guard and evidentiary hearing lasting for months. Andy had, on his own, learned to use the shorthand machine that you still see used in courtrooms. He took the entire testimony for that long hearing, then had to transcribe it. It was a monumental task. [A side note here, I (D. A. Sharpe) was an eight year old child living in Houston, Texas at the time of the explosion, and I still recall hearing it from our home, about 45 miles away.]

"Of course Andy and Elizabeth got married, and she transferred from Rice Institute to Ole Miss (the University of Mississippi). Andy had some health problems. He had chosen not to return to Mississippi State, nor to play any more football. By the time he finished at Ole Miss, I was living in Memphis and attended his graduation ceremony. As an aside, when Andy went to Miss State, he played some ball as a freshman due to the war having taken so many players. There was a player who was a freshman by the name "Shorty" McWilliams. He also joined the Navy and played at the Naval Academy. Then came back to Mississippi State and made All American. He was a running back."

I'm grateful to Bill for his vignettes to fill in our our family story. After a year in college, Andy entered the Coast Guard during World War II, serving in New York, New York and in Houston, Texas. It was in Houston that he met Elizabeth and their love flourished. It was in New York that he worked desk-by-desk in the same bullpen office of typists with Alex Haley (8/11/1921 - 2/10/1992), noted author of "Roots" and benefactor of black studies in America. On January 23, 1977, the TV mini-series "Roots," based on the Alex Haley novel, began airing on television on the ABC network.

It also was from New York that he proposed marriage to Elizabeth by long distance phone call, having equipped our Mother to have the engagement ring handy, assuming the positive reply, which, of course, did come.

After marriage August 14, 1948, and they both returned to pursing college education, they graduated from the University of Mississippi at Oxford, Mississippi. He'd originally had his sights set on the law profession. He even hinted that his ambition was to be Governor of Mississippi someday. However, while at Ole Miss, he sensed a calling of God on his life. He did some lay preaching in small country churches near Oxford. They moved after

graduation to Austin, Texas, where he enrolled in and graduated from the Austin Presbyterian Theological Seminary in 1954 Andrew (Andy) Albert Jumper attended APTS from 1951-1954, graduated with a Bachelor of Divinity, as verified in 2017 for me by Ms. Kristi Sorensen, the Associate Director of the Library and the Head of Archives & Records Management of Austin Presbyterian Theological Seminary in Austin.

While at APTS, Andy became friends with a student who attended 1950-1953, graduating with a Bachelor of Divinity Degree, Mr. Robert (Bob) Andrew Pitman, who later in life, as the Presbyterian Pastor of the Canal Street Presbyterian Church in New Orleans, Louisiana, conducted jointly with my father the marriage ceremony for Suzanne and me to be married! Andy and Andy also became workers jointly in the Presbyterian denomination through an organization they helped found, known as Covenant Fellowship of Presbyterians.

Andy was ordained in the Presbyterian Church in the United States (called the Southern Presbyterian Church).

Around 1955 (I'm uncertain now of the date), Andy had surgery with the results being reported as a tumor that was advanced in stage, and that his life expectancy was short and marginal. He was serving in his first Pastorate, Christ Presbyterian Church in Houston, Texas. Shortly before this medical incidence, he's purchased a sizable life insurance policy. He and Elizabeth reasoned that, with the expectation of those funds coming to her after he died, they wanted to enjoy what life they had remaining together. So they borrowed money and spent more money on furniture and things of enjoyment than they ever would have on their level of income.

At one point, the doctors reported that specimens from his tumor had been sent to other labs across the country. After a delayed time, the report was the the tumor was an extremely rare tumor that closely resembled the assumed malignant tumor, but that, instead, it was a complete benign tumor that just merely needed to be removed surgically in the near future!

Well, all of we in the family rejoiced greatly at this news. We'd lost our Andy and now he was found! The joy was with mixed emotions, as it soon was realized that no life insurance proceeds were coming in for those piled up bills for items purchased on credit! They had a lesson soon on really strict home budgeting and close spending for quite a while before emerging from their position on debt.

Around 1956, he became a pastor in Dallas. The first summer, he took a week of his vacation time off just to take me camping with him up in the Arkansas Ozark Mountains at a State Park. I'll always remember the fun we had as brothers-in-law. He was age 27 or so, and I was 17. One funny thing is in my memory. All week long, there was virtually no one else camped near us in the park. However, on the weekend, the park filled, and we had people all over the place, including other teenagers (girls too). The toilet facilities were outhouses at the top of the small hill from where we camped. Because there were so many people present, the toilet paper supply in them became exhausted. So, we had to carry our own roll up the hill when we needed to go.

My trip was memorable, because, just before entering the outhouse, I dropped my roll and it started unwinding all the way down to the edge of the lake, perhaps 30 or so yards away. I have to tell you that the mortified sense that I had as a high school guy who thought he was so cool was extremely great as I wallowed down the hill, picking up my paper! And I had to do this scooping up while I was in the condition of needing "to go." Andy was lounging in a hammock at the time and just laughed and laughed at my occasion of deep embarrassment. He did not lift a finger to help!

The churches he served were Christ Presbyterian Church, Houston, Texas; West Shore Presbyterian Church, Dallas, Texas; First Presbyterian Church, Lubbock, Texas; and Central Presbyterian Church, Clayton, St. Louis County, Missouri, from where he retired. His pastoral career included giving leadership to a number of events and movements in the denominations over the years, including being on the Joint Committee for Union, that resulted in the Southern Church reuniting with the Northern Church, officially the Presbyterian Church in the United States of America. The reunited church became known as the Presbyterian Church USA.

He wrote at least two books of significance in the Presbyterian Church (PCUS). "Chosen to Serve" was a training book for Deacons and the "Noble Task" was a training book for elders. They became the standard for local Presbyterian Churches in the South to use for officer training from the 1960's through the 1970's. Authors receive royalties for such publications, modest though they are. However, it is of interest that in the late 1970's, the publisher told Andy that his accumulated royalties on those two books represented the most that Presbyterian publisher had ever paid to any one author.

In later life, after some church controversies, he joined the newly-formed Evangelical Presbyterian Church, one with a more conservative or evangelical bent. He served that church with leadership, including being its General Assembly's Moderator for a one-year term. He was honored as one of the founders of the Evangelical Presbyterian Church.

He was Senior Pastor of the Central Presbyterian Church of Clayton, Saint Louis County, Missouri at the time when his first wife, Elizabeth (my sister), died of cancer in 1973. His second wife, Sydney, was a member of that church, and I was the best man at that wedding in 1974.

One of Andy's many pastoral talents included crafting sermon titles that simply drew the reader to want to hear what was to be said. People use to look at the church sign out front a couple of days before Sundays just to see what title would be used. I believe there even was a newspaper columnist reference about that one time, but its documentation is lost in my memory. A couple of titles stick in my mind. "Spitting Against the Wind" was one. It was about a sign in the old stage coaches for the tobacco chewers to be sure to spit with the wind, or suffer unexpected results. Of course, Andy gave it a spiritual application.

Another one was "Tiptoeing Through the Tithers." It was in the 1970's when musician/ comedian Tiny Tim was popular, and who made popular use of the song, "Tiptoe Through the Tulips." A coincidence is that the song really was first made popular in 1929, the year of Andy's wife's birth. This was a stewardship sermon. Andy told the congregation that he confessed to have taught them in the past incorrectly! He used to say that the highest goal in giving was the Bible's standard of 10%. Whatever you were giving currently, you just try to increase it year by year until you reach the satisfactory level of 10%. He said that he realized the error of that thinking, and that our giving was to begin with 10%, and then grow more as God blessed us.

This was one of the most successful sermons I ever heard from Andy. That year, the church's budget had been about \$600,000. After his sermon, the giving rose to about \$850,000! WOW! I guess some of the congregation was listening!

Both Andy and I involved ourselves in the controversies and theological arguments in the Presbyterian Church. Most of the time, we were partners in the various issues. We experienced lots of losses and some pretty nice victories.

The last year or so of his life, we found ourselves on opposite sides of some arguments. This was an unpleasant era of our lives, which kept us from enjoying the family fellowship we should have had. However, about three weeks prior to his 1992 death from cancer, I took the occasion to come up from Dallas to Saint Louis to spend a day visiting him. We were able to set aside our differences and had a really great reunion. Suzanne and I were in California for our niece's wedding the day Andy died. We chose to stay for the wedding, which was two days hence, as it represented a continuing life of joy to move forward. My time with Andy a few days earlier had been good and better than just being present at his funeral service.

Andy exhibited strength in his leadership and preaching, and enjoyed a well earned reputation as a pastor and leader of the church at large. His origins in life were in deprived settings. His life gravitated to significance and accomplishment in his life's calling. He was a great pastor, husband and father ... and brother-in-law.

Notes for Elizabeth Anne Sharpe:

I was the baby in our family of three children. My two sisters were 10 and 12 years older than I. Elizabeth, the middle child, was the one who graduated to heaven in the shortest length of years among all three of us. She lived only 44 years. Elizabeth died December 28, 1973. They had been married for 25 years.

Though Elizabeth Anne Sharpe was born August 9, 1929 in Little Rock, Arkansas, she based her claim of being a native Texan on the fact that she was conceived while the family still resided in Texas. She subsequently lived the great majority of her life in Texas as well.

Elizabeth's 1929 birth year was stormy. The big economic news was the famous Black Friday when, on October 28, the New York Stock Exchange plummeted by some \$26 billion in value of stocks owned by Americans. That was the one event that painted the profiles by which citizens would live for the next decade. America had become the world's leading industrial producer, having a 34.4% of the world's production pie. Second place England come up with 10.4% and third place Germany with 10.3%. And 1929 was the year of Saint Valentine's Day Massacre in Chicago where gangland pundits machine gunned each other on February 14.

Bell Laboratories began their experiments with color television, and Eastman-Kodak Company introduced 16 mm color movie film. It is sad that in early 2012, the 131-year old company filed of bankruptcy. George Eastman, the inventor after whom the Eastman-Kodak Company is named, is the sixth cousin, twice removed to Elizabeth. His best-known invention was photographic film.

The popular songs were "Stardust," "Tiptoe Through the Tulips" [yes, that song pre-dates Tinny Tim!], and "Singing in the Rain." "Walt Disney's Mickey Mouse cartoon films that year effectively killed off any further business for the outdated silent movies. Ernest Hemingway published "A Farewell to Arms." Actress Audrey Hepburn was born in England. Frenchman Erich Maria Remarque wrote "All Quiet on the Western Front." And Albert B. Fall, the Secretary of the Interior under Calvin Coolidge, was convicted of accepting a \$100,000 bribe from Edward L. Dohemy in the famous Teapot Dome scandal. He was sentenced to one-year in prison and fined \$100,000. Some say that's where the term "fall guy" is derived?

Source: Time Tables of History, Bernard Brun, pages 496-499

Spending most of her life in Texas, she was strong to assert her Texan heritage. Even though she was born shortly after her family moved to Little Rock, Arkansas, the fact that she obviously was conceived while the family still lived in Texas allowed her to claim to be a Texan! She is a fifth generation Texan, her great, great grandfather, Judge Felix Benedict Dixon, having come to San Augustine County, Texas by 1841. Her growing-up years were in Little Rock, then back to Texas in Ballinger, then in Houston.

When she was young, Elizabeth was known in the family as Betty or Betty Anne. I believe it was during college age years that she began using the more formal Elizabeth.

I remember the family laughingly re-telling a story about Elizabeth when she was pretty young, before my birth, wherein Daddy had given the girls a pair of baby rabbits for an Easter present. The cute thing about the story was the quotation coming from Elizabeth about her rabbit saying, "Ain't the 'lil yabbitt toot?"

Another anecdotal item about Elizabeth was about her Home Economics class in Junior

High. Yes, back in those days, schools taught girls skills often found in kitchens and in management of households. Upon beginning the part of the curriculum having to do with cooking, the class was asked to write any cooking recipes that one of them already knew. Betty Anne's recipe had to do with making toast by putting it in the lower oven, where it could be heated from overhead. The process outlined included the instruction at the end of taking a knife and scraping the toast! The funny part about it was that the toast should not be burned, but her experience at our home was that very often the toast was burned, so it was regular to need to scrape off the charcoaled character of the burnt toast!

Of my two sisters, Elizabeth was the more athletic. She played basketball in college and was pretty good at throwing a baseball (hardball). I remember her fondly as she spent time with me, just throwing a baseball back and forth in our long driveway! One day, when she was about age 17 and I was 7, a baseball she'd thrown to me glanced off to the side, going under a porch step on our church, which was across the driveway from our home. I was reluctant to crawl under the building in that dark to get the ball. So, problem solver that she was, Elizabeth wedged herself under the step to go after it. The problem was that she became stuck there, and could not back out. In my somewhat weaker state, I could not pull her out. So, what did I do?

I just refused to confront the problem, and I went into the house, not telling anybody that Elizabeth was stuck under the church! Fortunately, my father came home soon. Driving up the driveway, he spotted his daughter's legs protruding out from under the church. Of course, he extracted her successfully, but she was not happy with me. When Daddy found out it was because of my abandonment, I really was in trouble for punishment!

She graduated from San Jacinto High School in Houston as Valedictorian of her class in 1945. This was a very large student body high school near downtown Houston. It was named after the name of the near-by battlefield where the independence finally was won for Texas from Mexico, to become the Republic of Texas in 1836.

Both my sisters were active in the student fellowship at our Central Park Presbyterian Church, and our mother was an adult sponsor of the high school and college age group.

What I remember most about those groups were the summer trips we took to the Texas Gulf Coast island of Galveston. We'd spend the day on the beach and the evening at the night-life and carnival rides after that. They were fond memories. I especially remember the thrills riding the roller coaster! I was in the 6 to 8 year age when these things took place.

Elizabeth entered Rice Institute in Houston, following her sister. Having two children in the Sharpe family to gain entrance at Rice was an accomplishment and an honor for the Sharpe family, as the entrance requirements were and have always been very high. The academic reputation in Texas of Rice Institute was like the Harvard of Texas!

Her musical talent included being an organist for the church where our father was Pastor, Central Presbyterian Church, 6916 Sherman Avenue, Houston, Texas. This was down in the industrial east end of Houston, near the Houston Ship Channel.

One Sunday night when Elizabeth was a freshman at Rice Institute, a Coast Guard sailor visited the service with his roommate. That Coast Guardsman spotted Elizabeth playing the electric organ and the other sailor spotted a young lady in the choir. They both boasted to each other that they would marry these girls! What is fun is that they both did marry them later. The story is that Andy asked to walk Elizabeth home that night after the service [lots of folks did not have cars in those days]. She laughed at the question, but willingly went with him. Unbeknownst to him, the manse (our home) was just right next door to the church, just a few feet away from where he asked her!

They started dating in 1946. Andy won over the confidences of our family members, one by one. Sometime in 1947, the U.S. Coast Guard transferred Andy to an assignment in New York City. However, he kept their relationship up with fairly frequent long distance

telephone calls, even though they were somewhat expensive in those days.

Andy took our family into his confidence when he'd purchased an engagement diamond ring. Arrangements were made for us to have the ring and to be standing near her when he phoned at a designated time. He would take the occasion to ask her to marry him, and we were to present the ring to her when she accepted. He must have been pretty sure of himself, but it all worked as he'd planned, and it truly was a fun thing for me being only 8 years old at the time.

The wedding was planned in sync with the discharge of Andy from the service. A wonderful church wedding was planned with our father conducting the service, and many, many family friends helping out with the wedding plans. The marriage was August 14, 1948 on a Saturday evening. Dad didn't prefer Saturday weddings, as the preparations and events crowded into what usually was his sermon preparation for the next day! However, he went along with it for both daughters, as they both wanted Saturday weddings!

They went on their honeymoon by renting a cabin in the Bastrop State Park, near Bastrop, Texas in central Texas. It was a forest covered park of about 2,000 acres with a nice lake, about 10 years old at the time. It was the same park where Elizabeth's sister, Martha and her husband, Vic, had honeymooned the year before.

After the honeymoon, they came to our home in Houston to spend a few days before continuing on to begin college at the University of Mississippi.

Andy was a Mississippi boy, so after their marriage, each finished their college education at the University of Mississippi in Oxford. She graduated in 1950 and he in 1951. Elizabeth worked much of the time in various administrative and secretarial positions. She was an excellent typist! Actually, her husband also was a trained typist. The United States government's G.I. Bill for military experienced people assisted both of them in getting their college degrees.

Like her mother, Elizabeth did well serving the role of a Presbyterian Pastor's wife. Her educated experience allowed her to be a counselor and advisor to her husband in the things of ministry and of life. The first church where Andy was pastor was Christ Church in Houston, Texas. Later, they moved to West Shore Presbyterian Church, Dallas, Texas. These were years in the 1950s when my father was Pastor of John Knox Presbyterian Church in Dallas, as well. It was nice to have two family households in the same city.

Andy served as Pastor at the First Presbyterian Church in Lubbock, Texas 1962-1970. It was during those years that both of them had renewal spiritual experiences, learning more about the power of the Holy Spirit and speaking in tongues. These were really sweet years for them and they continued to mature in their spirituality. They were introduced to these things through a neighborhood Bible study they attended, led by some Episcopal lay people. Jack and Shelly Hall were especially instrumental in this and became very close personal friends with Elizabeth and Andy. The Hall's family was the one that started and owned the Furr Cafeterias and Food Stores operating at several places in Texas, but headquartered in Lubbock.

Elizabeth contracted cancer circa 1970, while they lived in Lubbock. Later that year, the family moved to Saint Louis County, Missouri, where Andy had received a call to be Pastor of the Central Presbyterian Church in Clayton. She died just after Christmas in 1973 at age 44. The hospital where she died was in the city of Saint Louis, but the family lived out in the County of Saint Louis. That's one of those strange situations where the city is of independent status, and is not under the jurisdiction of a county.

The story goes that the people residing out in Saint Louis County were alienated enough from the bad government leadership in the City of Saint Louis that the County people voted to separate from the city jurisdiction!

Her funeral was to be December 30, but ten inches of snow fell the evening before and the temperatures plunged down to bone-chilling readings. Finally, a few days after New Year's Day, the family put her to rest. The church was filled to overflowing. The graveside service for the family and close friends was very cold, with much of that snow still on the ground and the wind blown temperature in the teen's. Though I was thoughtfully prayerful at the graveside service of my sister, I believe that my fervent prayers included completing the service more quickly, so we could get back into a warm car! It really was bone-chilling cold like about 15 degrees with breeze blowing!

Elizabeth and Andy were married for just over 25 years.

Some weeks following her graveside service, a permanent gravestone was erected. It simply stated her birth and death dates, and her name as Elizabeth Ann Jumper. Some family members had thought it would have been good to include her Sharpe maiden name, and the unfortunate thing is that her middle name is spelled "Anne," rather than, "Ann" that is on the gravestone. I do not know why it was not noticed and correction requested. I did not notice it till some years later.

Elizabeth was a credit to her family. A devoted mother and wife, she lived life to the fullest and with the most detail. She was a swell sister as well.

Death Notes: Cancer

Generation 3

- 4. **William David Jumper** (son of David Malachi Jumper and John Anne "Annie" Turner) was born on Feb 07, 1902 in Socomarville, Arkansas. He died on Jun 02, 1928 in Marks, Mississippi. He married **Irma Belle Nason** (daughter of Albert Lancaster Nason and Ila Belle Ramsey) on Dec 20, 1924 in Marks, Mississippi.
- 5. **Irma Belle Nason** (daughter of Albert Lancaster Nason and Ila Belle Ramsey) was born on Jul 30, 1906 in Choctaw County, Mississippi. She died on Jan 06, 1968 in Lubbock, Texas.

Notes for William David Jumper:

Willam was born five days after Charles A. Lindbergh was born. Lindbergh was the American aviator who became the first man to fly the Atlantic solo nonstop from the United States to Europe. William died June 2, 1928.

Source:http://www.acepilots.com/lindbergh.html

He was an automobile mechanic and dealer-foreman. He met his wife, Irma, a school teacher, while she taught a country school between Black Hawk and Greenwood, Mississippi. He traveled wherever his employment took him, which accounts for his son, William, being born in Cotton plant, Arkansas.

In the mid 1920's, William and Irma located in Marks, Mississippi where he was employed at the Cox Motor Company as a Mechanic and Salesman.

His death, just 8 months after his second son was born, occurred in an automobile accident, just west of Marks, Mississippi. He was giving a customer a demonstration ride on a gravel road between Marks and Belen, Mississippi, in an open top touring Ford. Loose gravel was encountered, flipping the car over, pinning William underneath. He died several hours later at the local hospital in Marks.

In a paper written by one Louise De Loach in 1946 about William's mother, Joan Anne Turner, it is claimed that William was born in Solomonville, Arizona, rather than Socomarville,

Arkansas. So that is a discrepancy about which this writer has not resolved.

William received a college education, a fact made possible by the encouragement of his mother, who was a teacher herself, according to Ms. De Loach's paper. However in 2003, William's son, Bill Jumper, assured me that his father did not attend college. So, we have another discrepancy in reports about family history.

Notes for Irma Belle Nason:

Irma was born the same year as Aristotle Onassis (1/7/1906 -3/15/1975), the Greek shipping magnate, was born.

Source:http://www.rotten.com/library/bio/business/aristotle-onassis/

On March 17, 1906, just months prior to Irma's birth, President Theodore Roosevelt first used the term "muck-rake" as he criticized what he saw as the excesses of investigative journalism in a speech to the Gridiron Club in Washington. On December 10, 1906, later in the year of Irma's birth, United States President Theodore (Teddy) Roosevelt became the first American to be awarded he Nobel Peace Prize. This was on December 10, 1906, for helping mediate an end to the Russo-Japanese War. President Roosevelt is a fifth cousin to the 32nd President Franklin Delano Roosevelt, my half eighth cousin. His other relation to us is through his niece as well, Eleanor Roosevelt, who married Franklin Delano Roosevelt. So, Teddy is a cousin to a cousin.

Irma was a twin to her sister, Esther. After losing her husband, William, in the automobile accident, she married Lawrence Owing, and they operated a country general and grocery store, moving around to several locations.

It is interesting to see that the US Census enumerator for the Albert Lancaster & Ila Bell Nason household taken on April 17, 1930 was Irma B. Jumper! That's our Irma! The location was Quitman County, Mississippi. Irma and her two sons were living with Irma's parents, her husband having been killed in the automobile accident just two years earlier in 1928.

Her son, Bill Jumper, reported to me that from 1930 until 1944 they lived in Darling and Marks, Mississippi. They moved to Parkin, Arkansas in 1944. In 1952 they returned to Mississippi and lived in a rural area south of Olive Branch, Mississippi, operating a small country store. Sometime in the mid 1950's they came into poor health and moved to live with their son, Andy, who was a Presbyterian Pastor, who lived in Texas. Andy had come to visit, and found them in poor health.

Andy sold their business and everything they owned, and moved them to Dallas to live with him. He had a manse (residential home) as the Pastor of the Westshore Presbyterian Church and was able to house them with him, which turned out to have advantages for him and them. However, it was very crowded in that three bedroom manse. One bedroom was for each of the two married couples and one bedroom was left for the four Jumper children (two sets of bunk beds)!

Irma and Lawrence moved to Lubbock, Texas in 1962 with Andy, Elizabeth and the children when Andy accepted a call to be Pastor of the First Presbyterian Church there. That manse was four bedrooms, so living was a little more tolerable. It was while living there that both Irma and Lawrence died in the course of time. Both of them were life-time heavy smokers, and that condition seemed greatly to contribute their their demise.

6. **Dwight Alfred Sharpe** (son of Henry Seth "Harry" Sharpe and Mattie de Noailles "Mama Sharpe" Simons) was born on Sep 04, 1901 in Georgetown, Williamson County, Texas. He

died on Aug 02, 1981 in Alamo Heights, Bexar County, Texas. He married **Martha Dixon Chapman** (daughter of James Herschell Chapman and Margaret Lavina "Maggie" Abney) on May 31, 1926 in Lufkin, Angelinia County, Texas.

7. **Martha Dixon Chapman** (daughter of James Herschell Chapman and Margaret Lavina "Maggie" Abney) was born on Apr 05, 1904 in Lufkin, Angelinia County, Texas. She died on Aug 02, 1979 in Alamo Heights, Bexar County, Texas.

Notes for Dwight Alfred Sharpe:

Dwight Alfred Sharpe was born the year that George Gallup (11/18/1901- 7/26/1984), the American statistician and pioneering opinion researcher, was born. They died just less than three years apart.

My father lived through some of the turbulent times of racial strife in this nation. January 1901 was a stormy time in the South of the United States. On January 15, 1901, the Alabama Democratic Party called for a convention to write a new state constitution that would prohibit African-Americans from voting. Despite vocal opposition from Booker T. Washington and other Republican civil rights activists, the Democrat strategy succeeded. Democrats dominated Alabama's 1901 constitutional convention, and its chairman was a Democrat. In his opening address, he said: "If we would have white supremacy, we must establish it by law -- not by force or fraud... The negro is descended from a race lowest in intelligence and moral precepts of all the races of men."

Alabama's African-American citizens would not vote in appreciable numbers again until the 1950s. It was a Republican federal judge, Frank Johnson, who in 1956 ruled in favor of Rosa Parks. It was that same judge who in1965 ordered the Democrat governor, George Wallace, to permit Martin Luther King's voting rights march from Selma to Montgomery. At the 2000 Republican National Convention, Condoleezza Rice, destined to become the United States Secretary of State, said: "The first Republican I knew was my father and he is still the Republican I most admire. He joined our party because the Democrats in Jim Crow Alabama of 1952 would not register him to vote. The Republicans did. My father has never forgotten that day, and neither have I."

Democrats do not want Americans to remember that Republicans supported the 1964 Civil Rights Act much more than did the Democrats. It was passed in the U.S. Senate only after an 83 day filibuster led by the Democratic Party leadership in the Senate.

Source: http://grandoldpartisan.typepad.com/

This is the story of my father.

The guiding spiritual light in the family for Dwight's early years was his Mother, who saw to it that he had an involved and effective life in the First Presbyterian Church there in Georgetown. The Williamson County Sun newspaper issue of June 7, 1979, published an extensive full-page article and pictures on page 11 about the 125th recognition of the church's anniversary. Dwight was cited as being one of only three members of that church who went into the pastoral ministry over the 125 year time of its existence at that time.

Dwight's approval for candidacy for the Gospel Ministry was given by the Session of that church in 1922. I have a photocopy of the Minutes of the Session meeting. This was just after the retirement of Rev. M. C. Hutton, who was cited as one of the most effective pastors in that church's history, serving some 35 years from 1886 till 1921. He was the pastor who we understand had influence and encouragement on Dwight in his thinking and feeling a call to the ministry. The Session minutes were much more descriptive about the praiseworthy characteristics of Dwight than typical minutes are in today's world of just recording that the action was approved. Those details are a little later in this narrative.

Dwight was born in the year (in fact, just two days before) that President William McKinley

was assassinated by an anarchist and was succeeded by Theodore Roosevelt. Roosevelt, is the uncle of the wife of President Franklin Delano Roosevelt, Dwight's half seventh cousin, once removed. President William McKinley's assassin, Leon Czolgosz, was electrocuted October 29, 1901, just 55 days after the terrible event! WOW! Is that not justice faster than we see today?

It was the same year (1901) the Social Revolutionary Party was founded in Russia, later to be what we came to know as Communism. Film producer Walt Disney was born this year. Industrialist J. P. Morgan organized the U. S Steel Corporation, who was Dwight's fifth cousin, once removed. The first American Bowing Club tournament was held in Chicago in 1901 as well.

(Source: "The Timetables ofHistory" 3rd Revised Edition, Bernard Grun, Simon & Schuster, New York1991, pages 454-455) And he was born a few months after England'sQueen Victoria died in January.

The famous Jazz player, Louis Armstrong was born the year of Dwight's birth. Two days before Dwight was born, Vice President Theodore Roosevelt's famous advice, "Speak softly and carry a big stick," was offered in a speech at the Minnesota State Fair. That was the same day as the assassination of President McKinley.

On Dwight's 17th birthday, the beginning of his senior year in High School, September 4, 1918, there was the birth of Paul Harvey, who later would become a world-wide known radio commentator, even still broadcasting as recently as 2007. He graduated to heaven in 2009.

Dwight was President of his 1918 High School graduating class in Georgetown, Texas. He also was Business Manager of the School Annual, Salutatorian of his class, Vice President of the Literary Society, had a role in the Senior Play and lettered two years on the track team. In the yearbook. The Senior Class prophesy about him was to become a famous Texas lawyer!

He created a life-long bond of friendship with fellow student Walter Johnson, a neighbor in Georgetown who was physically disabled (wheel chair bound) and required personal tutoring during junior high and high school years. Dwight gave generously of his time. Walter married a woman who taught school, and they lived a wonderful life in the Hill Country of Texas on one of those clear spring-fed creeks. We visited them several times over the years while I was a young boy.

The high school data was made available to me when Mr. Tass Waterston, a member of Highland Park Presbyterian Church, visited me soon after my 1982 arrival on the staff of that church. He brought the 1918 HighSchool Yearbook of his, and I was able to photo copy relevant pages. Tass was a "best friend" and the same age as my father's younger brother, Harry Simons Sharpe, as they all grew up in Georgetown. Harry was known as "Dede." Tass has now passed on to graduation to heaven, but I was able to get to know his son, Tom Lee Waterston, and his grandsons, Tass Waterston II and Ted Waterston. Ted and his family have continued as members of Highland ParkPresbyterian Church, whereas the rest of the family has moved out of town by now. Ted served that church as a Deacon.

Dwight worked during high school in a combination general store and grocery store. The many migrant workers patronizing it created the environment in which he learned to converse in Spanish pretty well. This enabled him in later years to preach occasionally for Hispanic Presbyterian congregations.

He attended for one school year (1918-19) the University of Kentucky, the state which had been his mother's family's home from where they migrated to Texas. While attending The University of Kentucky, he stayed with a relative of his mother's, in a sense, a man called Uncle Tom Vance. Next, he attended for a year Southwestern University, a Methodist

institution located in his hometown of Georgetown. Dwight's photograph is in the 1921Southwestern University yearbook that my niece, Nancy Lea Ehlers Reeves, now has from materials she received after her Mom, Martha deNoailles Sharpe Ehlers, died. Martha is a daughter of Dwight's and is my eldest of two sisters. Southwestern was began in 1840 during the days of the Republic of Texas, and I believe it is the oldest continuously operating institution of higher education in Texas.

The 1920 U. S. Census for Lexington, Fayette County, Kentucky has Dwight living with the family of John T. Vance, age 62, whose wife's name was Glenna (legibility question), also age 62, and a 26 year old daughter named Mary. Possibly, the middle initial of "T" is for the Tom that we have understood was the home where Dwight resided while at school. This Mr. Vance would have been born in 1858. The Census entry shows Mr. Vance was born in Texas, but that his father and mother were born in Kentucky. The 1860 Census of Lexington, Burleson County, Texas shows him in the house of Charles Vance, with Tom being age three.

It is curious to know that a Mr. Charles P. Vance moved from Kentucky to Texas at around 1854, settling initially in Circleville, where the Alfred Simons family settled, coming from Kentucky. James A. Simons, born in Kentucky in 1852, and whose family came to Circleville in 1852, later, as an adult, went into mercantile business with Mr.Vance, both in Circleville and later in Taylor. Both of these towns are in Williamson County, Texas.

Since Mr. John T. Vance, with whom Dwight lived in Kentucky in 1920, was born in 1858 in Texas, it can be assumed that John T. Vance was a son of Charles P. Vance, and a brother to the Vance daughter, Sarah. If that kind of family connection does not exist, we do not have any other logical reason that Dwight went to Kentucky and lodged with the Vance's in Lexington. I think the set of relationships conjectured are likely, and I am recording them in my records until and unless other proof surfaces. It is interesting that the Vance families had connections to towns named Lexington, both in Kentucky and in Texas. Since their move to Texas in the early 1850's was when so many communities were just being established, one wonders if one name influenced the other.

The Minutes of the Session, July 26, 1922, record the declarations of his presence before them, seeking endorsement for his candidacy:

"Mr. D. A. Sharpe, a communing member of this, the Georgetown Presbyterian Church (as it was called then), presented himself before the Session and communicated the fact that he felt a call from the Holy Sprit to enter the Gospel Ministry, and to devote his whole time, first to the preparation for such work, and then to the active ministry in the Presbyterian Church in the United States. After an examination of Brother Sharpe, touching his determination to enter the ministry, the sureness of his call by the Holy Spirit, and his need of financial aid in prosecuting his studies and receiving the Seminary courses, the Session, by a unanimous vote, gives unanimous testimony to his good, moral character, to the fact that he is a faithful, consecrated and active communicating member of the Georgetown Presbyterian Church in good standing and we recommend him to the Presbytery of Central Texas for reception under its care as a fit candidate for the Gospel Ministry, and ask the Presbytery to furnish and secure for him such financial aid as may be required for the prosecution of his studies in the University of Texas and the Presbyterian Seminary."

Dwight graduated from the University of Texas in 1926 and from Austin Presbyterian Theological Seminary in 1926. I often wonder how he managed graduation dates from both institutions in the same year, though I do not know the months. Part of the time, if not much of it, that Dwight lodged in the Austin Seminary dormitory was with a roommate by the name of Will Morriss. Will was from a solid Presbyterian family in San Antonio, but he was in Austin as a student at the University of Texas Law School when they were roommates. Later in life, Will had a son name Ed who was a Drake Fraternity brother of mine in 1957-1959 in my days as a student at the Presbyterian school in Sherman, Texas, Austin College. Ed graduated, then met a tragic death in the Air Force during the Viet Nam era when the aircraft in which he was being transported disappeared into the depths of the Pacific Ocean, never to be found again. His sister, Molly, also became an Austin College graduate whom I knew there. She later married a Fraternity Brother of mine, David Duncan. David subsequently graduated from Austin Presbyterian Theological Seminary (APTS) and served a career as a Presbyterian pastor, including the church at Georgetown, Texas, my father's home church.

Dwight Alfred Sharpe attended APTS from 1922-1926, and graduated with a Bachelor of Divinity, as verified in 2017 for me by Ms. Kristi Sorensen, the Associate Director of the Library and the Head of Archives & Records Management of Austin Presbyterian Theological Seminary in Austin.

He attended the University of Texas at the same time he was a student at Austin Presbyterian Theological Seminary. He graduated from Texas in 1925. The Dallas Morning News published on Wednesday, May 27, 1925 a list of 735 graduates that May from the University of Texas in Austin. Dwight Sharpe of Georgetown was among the graduates.

His student days at the University of Texas was during that time that he met Martha Dixon Chapman, a young woman from Lufkin, Texas whom he courted. She lived in the Scottish Rite Women, immediately next door to the APTS campus where Dwight lived. Hearsay evidence passed on to me is that Dwight proposed marriage to Martha while sitting on one of the white stone benches in front of her dormitory. There are about five of them there today, so my photograph is at random, hopefully God's providence led me to photograph the correct one!

From a February 8, 1929 *Arkansas Gazette* newspaper article, we learned that during his Seminary student days, he served as supply pastor for churches at Gorman, Groesbeck and Paris, Texas

Their marriage was conducted in her home in Lufkin, Angelina County, Texas on May 26, 1926, immediately following their graduations. Though married in Angelina County, their marriage license was acquired through Williamson County, Dwight's home county.

Dwight spent his career continuously serving, mostly in Texas, as pastor of churches in this order: Laredo (1926), Little Rock (Arkansas 1929), Ballinger (1935), Houston (1941), Sweetwater (1951), Dallas (1954), San Antonio (1958), Ruidoso, New Mexico (1963), and finally at Houston(1965) for a new church development. In several of these cities, he was a member of Rotary International, a community service organization of business and professional people associated across the world. From my memory, they included Dallas (Fair Park Club), Sweetwater and San Antonio (nearby to Ballinger), and probably included other communities without my recollection or knowledge. In Laredo, it was the First Presbyterian Church. In Little Rock, it was the Paluski Heights Presbyterian Church.

The *Arkansas Gazette*, Little Rock, Arkansas, Texas on February 8, 1929, page 8, reported that the Rev. Dwight A. Sharpe, age 27, accepted the pastorate of the Pulaski Heights Presbyterian Church as of March 1. His first sermon was to be preached on Sunday, March 3, 1929. The article said that Rev. Sharpe accepted the church's call by telegram! It said his pastoring had been for three years in Laredo, Texas after graduating from the Austin Presbyterian Theological Seminary in Austin, Texas. It also cited his graduation from the University of Texas, including one year each at the University of Kentucky and at Southwestern University of Georgetown, Texas. Rev. Sharpe succeeds the pastorate of the Rev. Mr. C. A. Harper, who'd resigned in the Fall of 1928 to take a pastorate in Louisiana.

His pastoral activities appeared in the newspapers occasionally. In the *Arkansas Gazette*, Saturday, June 1, 1929, page 14, an article cited the expected sermons for the following Sunday. One of the pastors was Dwight Sharpe, Pastor of the Pulaski Heights Presbyterian Church, located at Woodlawn Avenue and Walnut Street. The Sunday 11:00 AM sermon was to be "The First Breakfast," and the 8:00 PM sermon was to be "An Honest Doubter." The same newspaper had an article about his sermons to be October 4, 1930 at 11:00 AM, "To Serve or Not to Serve," and at 7:30 PM, "Not Your Battle, But God's." (Saturday, October 2, 1930, page 22)

In Ballinger, it was the First Presbyterian Church. This was a special place for our family and his ministry. I was born there and baptized there! The family had an old Chevrolet automobile of about a 1931 vintage. When it came time for Dwight to respond to a pastoral call to move the family to Houston, Texas, the Ballinger congregation generously responded by providing the funds from among its members to purchase a brand new 1941 Chevrolet sedan! That was quite Providential, as 1941 was the last year that American automobiles were produced, due to the constraints of World War II starting. It is doubtful that the old 1931 Chevy would have made it through the War years of 1942-46. God's Provision is perfect, isn't it? Our family drove that car till 1948!

In Houston, it was the Central Park Presbyterian Church that changed its name to Trinity Presbyterian Church when it changed location in 1950. In Sweetwater, it was the First Presbyterian Church. In Dallas, it was the John Knox PresbyterianChurch. This was the church where many of my fond memories reside, as it was during my high school years, and my experiences of growing up emotionally and having dating experiences were strong. In San Antonio, it was the Highland Park Presbyterian Church. In Ruidoso, it was the Ruidoso Presbyterian Church. In Houston again, it was the Garden Oaks Presbyterian Church. It was a new church development of the Presbytery. Unfortunately, it did not survive long after his 1968 retirement.

After my arriving in Dallas, Texas as a staff member at Highland Park Presbyterian Church in 1982, I was visited by an Elder of the church, Mr. Austin B. Watson. He gave me a telephone directory page, complete with photographs of those listed, of the 1955 Fair Park Rotary Club of Dallas. Austin, still a member of that club, had been there when my father was a member. It was so nice of him to give me the page where my Dad was listed, along with his photograph. Austin went on to join Dwight in heaven in 2003.

Dwight was a reconciler and a rebuilder of churches. Many of his calls were to churches that had experienced some sort of set back in the immediate past, and his coming helped things get mended in the church's ministries.

A married couple at Trinity Church in Houston went to the mission field in the Belgium Congo 1951-1968. Eric S. Bolton was an architect and his wife, Ruth Lomig Bolton, was an administration worker. Missions was a strong emphasis for Dwight's ministry and for Texas Presbyterian Churches.

Retired missionary Winnifred K. Vass compiled a roster in 1986 of all 427 Presbyterian missionaries who had served over the years in the Presbyterian Congo Mission. Texas was represented by 65 (15%) of all who had gone from 30 states. This certainly is a disproportionately large share from Texas, representing more than twice what would be the average.

Winney, spent her retired life as a member of Highland ParkPresbyterian Church and she, along with her missionary husband, Lachlin Vass, lived at Presbyterian Village North in Dallas, a retirement community that many of the people of Highland Park Presbyterian Church were included in its development. Lach Vass, Winnie's husband, was on the HPPC Business Office staff when I arrived, then he retired in 1983. I selected his son-in-law, Mr. Todd W. Rutenbar, to take Lach's place, working with me as my Assistant Business Manager. Todd was still working with there when I retired in2004, and still is there in 2012 as this is written.

My Father's last call in the ministry was to be the establishing evangelist for a new church development in Houston, Texas under what then was known as Brazos Presbytery (now known as New Covenant Presbytery). "Brazos," his Presbytery in Houston, means "arms" or "hugs" in Spanish, as my niece Frances Barton Boggess tells me. He assumed the position of Evangelist and organizing pastor for the Presbytery for the church to be Gulf Meadows

Presbyterian Church at 8000 Fuqua Street at Ballantine in distant southwest Houston. He assumed the post on April 3, 1966 and got a good start, even having a handful of members who formerly were at Central and Trinity Presbyterian Church at 7000 Lawndale in earlier years (1941-51) when he pastored there. Unfortunately, the pastor following him experienced problems that ultimately resulted in the church disbanding. The church had had a good start, but was not yet strong enough to survive such a bump in the road. I think that pastor got too organized. Though I never met that pastor, he was the brother of a young lady I dated a few times while we were students at Austin College in Sherman, Texas. Both she and her husband became good, productive members of a prominent church in Houston and assumed leadership roles. Actually, her husband was my freshman and sophomore year roommate at Austin College in Sherman, Texas.

The invitation letter for Dwight's retirement services, dated April 8,1968, was received by various members of our family. It came from Reuben Meeks, Committee Chairman at the Gulf Meadows Presbytery Church and a former member of our Trinity Presbyterian Church. His retirement reception was the afternoon of April 28, 1968 at the church. It was a wonderful occasion for our family to attend. This was the conclusion of forty two years as a Presbyterian pastor. Suzanne and I, along with our two children (Todd wasn't born yet), were there.

Dwight and Martha had purchased a home for retirement in San Antonio (Alamo Heights). It was at 201 Normandy, just a couple blocks west of Broadway, a major north-south street. Since it was purchased more than a year prior to planned retirement, it was leased to tenants. Unfortunately, when they finally retired, the renters, for some reason not acceptable to Dwight and Martha, were unable to vacate the house on time. Dwight and Martha had to make temporary digs do till they could get over this frustration.

This was a their last home and a lovely home it was in a lovely neighborhood of San Antonio, Bexar County, Texas. Actually it was in a suburb named Alamo Heights, a city surrounded by San Antonio. They were just two blocks from the Alamo Heights Presbyterian Church, which they made as their church home. He was used to teach an Adult Sunday School Class up until about six months prior to his death at age 80, which gave him good outlets to use his pastoral gifts. The pastoral staff also used him for visitation and other duties useful for the ministry of the church. This was volunteer work, to my knowledge, and a labor of love for him.

His primary hobby through many of the years of his life was photography. It manifested itself to most people through the hundreds of unique Christmas cards with family members that he created for over 30 years. He used the typewriter for much for his correspondence, Bible study and sermon preparation. It was an ancient Underwood manual typewriter, on which he typed using what we laughingly called the Bible Method he would seek and find! He may have been one of the fastest typists using only the index fingers of his two hands that I have ever witnessed. Finally, around the mid 1970's, he acquired a portable electric typewriter from Sears!

He was a prolific reader, both of periodicals and of books. He held his children to high standards for academic achievement, and that was successful for his daughters. My academic records were far over shadowed by those of my two sisters.

Dwight involved himself in the communities where the family lived. He would join civic organizations and do joint ministries with other churches. He often became known in the public media, as evidenced by this delightful column by Renwicke Cary in the "San Antonio Light" newspaper issue of August 4, 1963:

"Back to the word 'breeches' (pounced britches by many Texans) and its use in several places in different versions of the Bible. Rev. Dwight A. Sharpe, pastor of the Highland Park Presbyterian Church, notes there was one edition of the Geneva Bible (1560) that became popularly known as the 'breeches Bible." This because 'breeches' appeared in Genesis 3:7. The verse concluded: 'And they (Adam and Eve) sewed fig tree leaves

together and made them breeches As a matter of fact, however, Sharpe says, the same rendering of the verse was found in the Wycliffe Bible (1380).

"Still on the subject of Bibles of the centuries past, we are reminded that the first printed copy of the whole Bible was the Coverdale Bible of 1535. Sharpe says: 'It's a credit to the printers that there were few typographical errors in the early Bibles.' Even so, he reports, in the second edition of the Geneva Bible (1562), Matthew 5:9 was made to read: 'Blessed are the placemakers, instead of peacemakers.' As a consequence, collectors designated this as the 'Placemaker Bible.' Sharpe also tells of a 'Printer's Bible,' explaining: 'This was the name applied to the King James edition of 1653, because in Psalms119:161, King David was made to say: 'Printers have persecuted me without cause.' It should have read, 'princes,' of course."

Both Dwight and Martha were very quiet regarding the subject of politics. They felt that whatever political views they held should not become known to the public of their congregation, since ministry was still to be given to people of all political persuasions. They did not even allow me to know how they voted or what political party they supported until well into my adult life, after I became an active Republican and Dad had retired from the ministry. Dad told me that they had always voted Republican, and living in what was virtually an all Democratic Party state in Texas most of their lives, it was best for his ministry to keep that to themselves. I recall that many of our close family friends were active Democrats and Labor Union members (particularly in the Houston years of the 1940's) and that did not affect our opportunity to have close Christian relationships with them.

When Dwight died, he was found in bed on August 8, 1981. That has been the official published date of his death, as that is when he was found and the public officials proclaimed him deceased. However, judging from when it was reported he was last seen by neighbors, and by the dates on accumulated newspapers and mail at his home, he apparently passed away in his sleep on the night of Sunday, August 2nd, two years to the day that Martha also went to be with our Lord in her sleep. He lacked a month of reaching his 80th birthday.

Dwight's funeral was conducted by the Rev. Mr. Newton Cox, pastor of the Alamo Heights Presbyterian Church of San Antonio, Texas, and assisted by an old friend of Dwight's, a retired minister, the Rev. Mr. John Parse. Two of my friends from high school days attended, Jewell (Judy) Linn Shoup Shannon and Dr. Richard (Dick) Hall White. The funeral was at the church at 10:00 AM on August 12, and the grave side service was later in the day in Georgetown, Williamson County, Texas, some 110 miles away. He rested next to his wife, and near his his parents and other relatives at the Odd Fellows Cemetery, near the campus of Southwestern University. This is the college where he attended his sophomore year and where his great grand daughter, Victoria (Vicky) Lea Reeves attended, having entered as a freshman in 2003.

On October 20, 1981, the Session of Trinity Presbyterian Church, Houston, Texas, passed a resolution that on Sunday, November 15, Dwight would be honored and memorialized for his faithful decade of service there with the dedication of a pew. His daughter, Martha, and her husband, Vic, attended the dedication service on November 15,1981 at the church to represent the family. During his ministry there, according to the Sessional Resolution, Dwight received 312 members by transfer of church membership, 164 members by profession of faith in Jesus Christ (I was one of those on Palm Sunday, March 18, 1951!), baptizing 91 of those, baptizing 99 infants and receiving 11 of their parents on profession of faith at the same time. Under his ministry, three young men made commitments to the Gospel Ministry and one couple went to the mission field in the Congo. He administered infant baptism to all nine of his grand children.

Dwight lived to see one of his great grand children, Matthew, son of Kevin and Nancy Reeves. Nancy is the daughter of Dwight's daughter, Martha. We are proud of Matthew in the family sense, as he married Libby and they went on to give issue to the first eighth generation Texan member of our family in 2005, Benjamin Thomas Reeves. He now has a

second son, Zachary. Nancy is the Pastor of the Grace Presbyterian Church of Roundrock, Williamson County, Texas. Matthew's younger brother, Christopher Thomas Reeves, now is married to Sarah Shaney Reeves.

Dwight Alfred Sharpe was a man of unquestioned integrity and was known as a man with a pastor's heart. He provided well for his family, raising children who were a credit to their parents' Christian values. My regret is not spending more time with him, especially in our adult years. Physical distances of living kept us from enjoying that as much as we should have.

Notes for Martha Dixon Chapman:

My mother, Martha Dixon Chapman, was born April 5,1904, the year that Theodore Roosevelt had his first election to the Presidency of the United States, after having succeeding William McKinley who was assassinated while President. This was the year that author Jack London published *The Sea-Wolf*. Puccini's *Madame Butterfly* opera opened in Milan, Italy. Work began on the Panama Canal. The Rolls-Royce Company was founded in England. Helen Keller graduated from Radcliffe College and the Broadway subway opened in New York City.

(Source: "The Timetables of History" 3rd Revised Edition, Bernard Grun, Simon & Schuster, New York 1991, pages 456-457)

Martha was born in her Lufkin home at 419 Abney Avenue. Living on a street with your family name is a hint as to the place the family held in the eye of the community. Her mother's maiden name was Margaret Lavina Abney. Her church life was in the First Methodist Church. Martha was age five when her mother died, and age 21 when her father died, which was a hardship. She and her younger brother, Herschell Albert Chapman, were raised after their Mother's 1909 death by their grandmother and grandfather, Martha Jane Dixon Abney and James William Abney. Dr. James Herschell Chapman, their father, resided with them in the Abney home for a while.

Martha Jane Dixon Abney, Martha's grandmother, was widowed in 1913, and Dr. Chapman soon moved out from the house. He had been much older than his wife, Maggie, being only one year younger than his mother-in-law, Martha Jane Dixon Abney. Family oral tradition reported that he felt it was more appropriate to move out, as it did not reflect the proper appearances for an unmarried man and woman so close in age to be domiciled together.

Maggie continued to raise his children, Herschell and Martha, in her home. After Dr. Chapman married the third and last time, to a woman named Josephine, his contacts with the Abney family apparently became somewhat detached, or at least the recording of continuing relationship has not been identified by me.

Martha had a high school teacher of science about 1919 or so, named Mr. Blevins. It is of interest to know that he also taught me in Dallas, Dallas County, Texas during my ninth grade in 1954, at Alex W. Spence Junior High School, about 35 years later! There is also a Miss Bess Wood of Lufkin who taught at that same Dallas school at the time I was there, and who remembers my being there. She is Lillian's Aunt, Tempy Wood Abney's sister. Bess was born March 17,1897. In 1987, Bess resided at the Angelina Nursing Home, where Suzanne and I visited her once.

Martha attended the University of Texas at Austin, graduating in June of 1925. On the certified copy I have of the information she completed with her application to college, on the blank requesting her home address, said *No Street Address*. When you live on the street bearing your family name (Abney) and you are the only "mansion" on it, there is no need for an address number back then. You could just address a letter to them in Lufkin! Such were the days!

She was elected a member of the honor society, *Phi Beta Kappa*, according to the certified college transcript copy, the first scholastic fraternity in America. Phi Beta Kappa was organized at the College of William and Mary in Williamsburg, Virginia on December 5,1776. She had a double major in Latin and Greek. She was then engaged for marriage to fellow University of Texas student and Austin Theological Presbyterian Seminary student, Dwight Alfred Sharpe. She taught in the Lufkin Public Schools the ensuing year after here graduation.

Martha's education was in the classics, which was the usual major for the very few women of that day who were privileged to attend college. Martha and her husband-to-be would be the first generation of our family to graduate from the University of Texas. Now, three generations have graduated from there and a fourth maybe is on his way!

Growing out of that refined education was her skill in writing. I cherish the one "love letter" that came into my possession only in recent years that my Mother sent to my Father during the year that she taught school in Lufkin and he completed his Seminary studies in Austin before they married. Here is how the letter of October 20,1925 went:

"Dearest Sweetheart

"Please forgive me for writing on this paper. I'm in a powerful big hurry and can't hunt for any more. Last night I had so many papers to grade that I got sleepy and went to bed without ever writing to the sweetest person on earth. I thought about you, dearest, between papers and the last thing before I went to sleep, and the first thing this morning. Honey, you're in my heart all the time. I'm going to scribble this off just so it can be mailed this morning, and it won't be late. Tell me if you get it tomorrow morning.

"I'm the happiest thing, because I had a sweet letter waiting for me from your mother yesterday when I came in from school. Dwight, already I just love her to death. Don't tell your father, but she said when he read my first letter, he said "Well, I'm kinda left out on this deal." She said he was a little jealous, but said she was to send his love anyway. Now I just believe I will write him a little note or letter all to himself. I may enclose it with your next letter and you can give it to him when you pass through Georgetown Saturday. Is that all right? You know how easy it is for women to talk to each other, but because I'd never met him, I just felt a timidity in writing.

"The funny thing about it is that I was writing to your mother the same time she was writing to me. Guess she received mine yesterday too.

"Sweetheart, love me lots and don't blame me for writing like this. I just had so much work. I'll promise never to let it happen again. I'll write again tomorrow night.

"Must hurry up and eat breakfast now. Want to eat with me? I built the fire this morning.

Lovingly, Your own Martha"

Well, how's that for good romantic narrative?! Wonderful!

Martha graduated in 1925 and taught in the Lufkin Public Schools the following year, while my father completed his final year at Austin Presbyterian Theological Seminary in May of 1926.

Serving as wife of the Pastor suited Martha well. She loved living the role and the people loved her doing it. After marriage, her only gainful employment was as a teacher in the Houston Public Schools, Harris County, Texas during the 1940's World War II years when there were such shortages of people to teach.

During her daughters' high school years, she served as adult sponsor for the High School Youth Fellowship at the Central Park Presbyterian Church, located at 6914 Sherman Street,

a couple of blocks east of 75th Street, near Wayside Boulevard. Fondly remembered by me are the summer trips on the weekends when the whole Sharpe family and the Youth Fellowship spent all day Saturdays at Stuart's Beach in Galveston on the Gulf of Mexico. One of my favorite memories were the many times when we went riding on the old-fashioned wooden roller coaster near the beach!

Reading was also an avocation for Martha. She "screened" much material for Dwight, marking articles and books she though it would be good for him to read. She truly was a helpmate for her husband in all the best senses of that concept. She was a lady of the South in all its good senses of culture and heritage. And she was a wonderful mother to me, always holding up the bar for me to climb higher for better things, and to know God and our role with Him.

Martha was such a lady of positive influence on me. She was a woman of learning and culture, and instilled a respect and interest in those things in me. Though there were occasions for her to correct or discipline me for my actions, there never was a moment when I thought she did not love me with the upmost of motherly love. Though my father was the Pastor and spiritual head of the family, it was my mother who instructed me from the very beginning of receiving income (a weekly allowance at first) to set aside 10% of it for the offering at church that Sunday.

I didn't understand why, but the practice of tithing instilled in me a pattern that has endured all of my life. The only change in it is that my giving, and that of me and my wife, has only increased in % to where we now give around 20% or more. We have since developed in the spiritual understandings about how and why that is the proper and prosperous thing to follow. Our blessings have been abundant!

Martha's remains left behind when she graduated to heaven are deposited in the grave site adjacent to her husband in the Georgetown Cemetery, near Southwestern University, Georgetown, Williamson County, Texas.

Generation 4

- 8. **David Malachi Jumper** (son of Malachi Wesley Jumper and Adeline Seymoor) was born on Mar 18, 1854 in Nettleton, Lee County, Mississippi. He died on Mar 12, 1933 in Blackhawk, Mississippi. He married **John Anne "Annie" Turner** on May 16, 1899 in Sidon, Leflore County, Mississippi.
- 9. **John Anne "Annie" Turner** was born on Feb 07, 1871 in Blackhawk, Mississippi. She died on Apr 25, 1951 in Phoenix, Arizona.

Notes for David Malachi Jumper:

In the year of David's birth, Texas was linked by telegraph on February 14, 1854 with the rest of the United States, when a connection between New Orleans and Marshall, Texas was completed.

Source:http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/February_14

David Malachi Jumper was born in Nettleton, Lee County, Mississippi. David is the great grandfather of Andrew Albert Jumper, husband of my sister, Elizabeth Ann Sharpe Jumper. Born on the very same day as David was Lucinda Mantooth, in Newport, Cocke County, Tennessee. She is the grandaunt of Watson T. Simons, the half first cousin, once removed, of my sister, Elizabeth, on our father's side of the family.

Two days following David's birth, a significant political event for the United States occurred. On March 20, Republicans celebrate -- or should celebrate -- the anniversary of its Grand Old Party, organization on that date in 1854. At the time, the Democrats in control of Congress were moving toward passage of their Kansas- Nebraska Act, allowing slavery to expand into the western territories. The Democrat President, Franklin Pierce, said he would sign the bill into law. President Pierce is my sixth cousin, three times removed.

Amid the intense reaction, a grassroots movement arose to oppose the pro-slavery policies of the Democratic Party. In just a few months, these town meetings and demonstrations coalesced into the Republican Party.

Several sites share the credit as its birthplace, but the GOP was named in Ripon, Wisconsin. At a March 20, 1854 meeting convened by anti-slavery activist Alvan Bovay, fifty-five men and three women called for all opponents of slavery to unite in a new organization, to be called "the Republican Party." This name had a past as well as a future. Thomas Jefferson, James Madison and many other Founding Fathers had called themselves "Republicans."

The Ripon meeting was widely reported in the newspapers. Just two months later, Members of Congress who opposed slavery declared themselves to be Republicans. In July, the Republican Party held its first state convention, in Jackson, Michigan.

Within two years, the GOP became a major national party, controlling the U.S. House of Representatives, and in 1860 Abraham Lincoln, my 30th cousin, three times removed, was elected the first Republican President of the United States.

Souce: Michael Zak, Republican published historian, in circulated e-mail March 20, 2008, which I received. Family relationships cited are by D. A. Sharpe, the author.

David Jumper became one of the first merchants to operate a grocery store in the fledgling town of Nettleton, Mississippi, which was built in 1887 along the tracks of the new Kansas City, Memphis & Birmingham Railroad line.

"The Eureka News," a nearby community newspaper, reported in its July15, 1887 edition an account about the new business activity in Nettleton. This was included, "In 1887, David Jumper began serving as the first town marshal of newly incorporated Nettleton, Mississippi. Dave was appointed marshal by Governor Robert Lowery." However, the article went on to describe how his popularity with the voters was low enough that he lost the election of 1890 to William T. Brazil, a CSA veteran. One newspaper article reported that Jumper took time out from his grocery story operation and his marshal duties during the day to play a game called billiards! This may be part of why the voters did not endorse him at this time.

David took his new bride the next year after marriage and moved in 1899 to Solomonville, Graham County, Arizona. The 1900 Census indicates his occupation was that of a jail warden (Precinct #5, page2 census by John M. Hackett). Obviously this June 15, 1900 recording of the census was taken at the county jail, as the next eight people listed after David were all listed as prisoners in the occupation column. The tenure listed as living there was one year, which confirms our other data about the move out west. It also indicated that his home was owned free of any mortgage, indicating some degree of financial stability for David. The census also reflected that he could read, could write and could speak English.

It is of interest to note that Solomonville had a John Jumper from Mississippi listed on the following page, and that is David's wife, John Annie Turner Jumper.

Notes for John Anne "Annie" Turner:

It is told that the parents strongly desired a son, and when Annie was born, she was named John Anne Turner. However, through much of her life, when a full name was displayed, it usually was J. Anne Turner. However there was some use of changing the John to Joan, which apparently some people used, as evident in the paper cited below.

We are indebted to Louise DeLoach of Greenwood, Mississippi, who as a sophomore high school student in 1946, wrote a paper about "The Most Remarkable Person I have Even Known." It was about Joan and our information about her in this portion comes from that paper.

Annie was reared on a farm near Black Hawk, Mississippi. Her parents had come to the area in 1844 in a covered wagon from Tuscaloosa, Alabama when her mother was only nine years old, and the family homesteaded 640 acres of land. Joan was born on this homestead. The very next year after her marriage to David, they moved to Solomonville, Arizona in 1899. This was a town named after Isadore Elkan Solomon, a German immigrant, who came to Pueblo Viejo in the mid-1870s. The mail carrier suggested that town be named after him about 1878.

Both children of Annie and David were born in Solomonville. However, we have other indication that one was born in Socomarville, Arkansas. So, we are uncertain about which location is accurate.

Annie and David returned to Mississippi with their family in 1903 on account of Annie's father's illness and death. After that, the family moved to the Mississippi Gulf Coast, where Joan continued her work as a teacher.

In 1913, Annie's mother died and Annie inherited the old family home at Black Hawk. She continued to teach until both of her children completed college, according to the paper being cited. However, in 2003, her grandson, Bill Jumper, Jr. insisted in telling me that his father did not attend college.

Here is an account Bill gave about his dear grandmother, Annie, and the DeLouch family relationship with them: "I knew the Deloches quite well, they were customers and friends of my grandmother, Andy and myself. [Andy is Andrew Albert Jumper, Bill's brother and my brother-in-law] From 1930 till 1941, we brothers would spend four to six weeks every year with our grandmother and occasionally at Christmas time. While we were there, each week, one of us would go with her when she made her weekly rounds in Greenwood to sell the many items that she carried for sale. They were many and varied. She was successful and, during hard times, survived quite well. She had a regular route that she covered and her clients would have been considered the upper class. She used her automobile for these trips every Thursday. By removing the back seat, she could carry quite a load of all sorts of stuff.

"When her father died, in his will, he deeded a larger share of his property to my grandmother's two brothers, but gave her the old homestead and 140 acres. The old homestead was a colonial type large home and stood about a quarter of a mile off the gravel road, so that she had to egress through one of the brother's property where the road had been for many years. Well, the brother on who's property the road was on got mad, because he felt it unfair that she should get the homestead. He took a crew of Blacks with axes and laid down huge pine trees across the road from start to finish. They were still there when I was a boy. Her other brother then gave her an easement and anew road had to be built.

"My grandmother had a Black tenant farmer and he farmed the open land cotton, corn and sorghum. She owned a team of mules and some hard scrabble equipment. She used the tenant to help around the place for extra cash. She raised two huge gardens, had over 6,000 chickens and about twenty-five dairy cows. Her tenant and his wife milked the cows every night and the milk was brought to the house where it was run through the separator. All the milk was separated. She kept very little whole milk. Therefore, she sold pure cream and butter made from pure cream. We had plenty of fat free skim milk. Most people today have no idea how hard times were back then. She had a horse and a creek ran through her place. So Andy and I enjoyed our summers in Black Hawk. We were mostly free to

roam the woods and had a wonderful time."

As her husband came into failing health, Annie assumed responsibilities to operate the family farm business of dairying and poultry raising. She marketed her farm produce primarily in Greenwood, about 25 miles away every Thursday. She often had with her a delightful supply of plums, flowers and blackberries. Joan was assisted by a few Negro farm hands.

Double tragedy come into Annie's life when her son was killed in an automobile accident, followed eight weeks later by the death of her daughter at the Kings Daughters Hospital of Greenwood. Her two grandsons were like God's gift to comfort her at this point in Annie's life.

Bill Jumper, Jr., her grandson, reported to me in 2003, "I knew her well and visited often during my youth, in fact Andy and I spent many summers in our youth with her often staying up to several months every summer. She had a farm and colonial home in Black Hawk, Miss., Carroll County."

Ms. DeLouch's testimony about Annie (who she addressed in her paper as Joan) is inspiring. "She drove her own car. She was one of the finest Christian characters I have ever known. No one could be placed above her in my estimation. She never complained or asked for help. She never thought of herself in any important matter. She was always willing to help you in any possible way. Many times did we go out to her home and have picnics and swimming parties on Abiaca Creek. She would prepare delicious food such as I have never seen, and never think about it or the cost. She was the most carefree soul to have so many heavy burdens to carry."

After living on the farm alone for thirteen years, she sold the farm and relocated to an apartment in Greenwood. Later, she visited friends in Arizona and elected to move to Phoenix. She died while living in Phoenix.

- 10. **Albert Lancaster Nason** (son of John Alexander "Little John" Nason and Sarah Ann Davis) was born on Apr 08, 1870 in Choctaw County, Mississippi. He died on Oct 27, 1947 in Darling, Mississippi. He married **IIa Belle Ramsey** (daughter of Sheldon Lovick P. Ramsey and Louise "Lou" Lewis) on Jun 13, 1897 in Choctaw County, Mississippi.
- 11. **Ila Belle Ramsey** (daughter of Sheldon Lovick P. Ramsey and Louise "Lou" Lewis) was born on Aug 25, 1875 in Choctaw County, Mississippi. She died on Jul 20, 1953 in Marks, Mississippi.

Notes for Albert Lancaster Nason:

Albert's year of birth in 1870 was in times of significant developments in the Roman Catholic Church. Pope Pius IX condemned liberalism, socialism, and rationalism; also proclaims the ImmaculateConception of the Virgin Mary. The First Vatican Council declared the Pope infallible in the year 1870.

Source:http://chi.gospelcom.net/centuries/cnt19.shtml

His medical practice was mainly in and around Darling, Mississippi. The first issue for this family were twin daughters. Darling wasseven miles north of Marks, Mississippi, both being in Quitman County. Marks was where Irma and her husband, William, resided at the timeof William's accidental death.

His daughter, Irma, described his funeral in the November 4, 1947letter to Martha Dixon Chapman Sharpe. "The services were said in thelittle white church which Daddy had worked so faithfully to helpbuild. A past pastor and a dear friend of the family came a distanceto say the services. His reading is found in the 23rd chapter of St.Luke; 50th through 56th verses. His remarks were according - 'and hewas a good man, and just."

In that same letter, she refers to her son as Albert, which was alwayshis first name in her mind. The birth certificate said Andrew AlbertJumper, which was fine with Andy. She commented about hiscommunication, "No, Albert never tells me anything. In fact, Ihaven't heard in over a week. You might tell him my address is stillthe same."

Notes for Ila Belle Ramsey:

Ila was interested in the Nason family history and did gather someinformation about it. Our understanding is that the Ramseys were fromScotland. They were Highlanders who were defeated and who then wentto Ireland before immigrating to the United States.

- Henry Seth "Harry" Sharpe (son of John Elsefer Sharp II and Sarah Lavenna Kellogg) was born on Aug 26, 1874 in Ravenna, Portage County, Ohio. He died on Mar 20, 1951 in Georgetown, Williamson County, Texas. He married Mattie de Noailles "Mama Sharpe" Simons (daughter of James Alfred "Jim" Simons and Charrie Elizabeth "Bettie" Eubank) on Jun 07, 1900 in Georgetown, Williamson County, Texas.
- 13. **Mattie de Noailles "Mama Sharpe" Simons** (daughter of James Alfred "Jim" Simons and Charrie Elizabeth "Bettie" Eubank) was born on Aug 20, 1876 in Taylor, Williamson County, Texas. She died on Feb 22, 1944 in Georgetown, Williamson County, Texas.

Notes for Henry Seth "Harry" Sharpe:

Harry's birth record at the Portage County Courthouse in Ravenna reports his name as Henry Seth Sharp. Harry is the English diminutive for Henry, which apparently he used throughout his life, and by which he named one of his two sons, and by which a grand son is named. In all legal references to his name in Texas, Harry has been the operative name used, including on legal documents. Harry is my paternal grandfather, known to me as Papa Sharpe.

His Portage County birth record is a secondary source document. At some point in history, the courthouse had a fire in which many original records were destroyed, included John's. Later, county staff people assembled a birth record from other records in the county and nearby cities to represent best efforts at reconstructing a birth file. Papa Sharpe's gravestone in Georgetown, Texas cites a birthdate as August 26, 1874. That is the day "the family" always knew to celebrate for him. However, the reconstructed birth record, identified as FHL File Number 891394, his birthdate is August 4, 1874. I am making an assumption that the August 26 date is the accurate date, and the one we will use.

Harry apparently was named after his uncle, Henry Sharp, his father's brother. Seemingly, of the four children in the family of John Elsefer and Elizabeth Sharp, only these two brothers moved to Ohio, John Elsefer Sharp II and Henry Sharp.

The year that Harry was born, 1874, was the year that national leaders US President Herbert Hoover and English Prime Minister Sir Winston Churchill were born. Sir Winston is the eleventh cousin, once removed, to U.S. President Franklin Delano Roosevelt, my half eighth cousin. Our ancestor in common is our seventh great grandmother, Alice Carpenter Southworth Bradford. FDR descends from her first husband, Edward Southworth, and my line descends through her second husband, Plymouth Colony Governor William Bradford.

Verdi's "Requiem" was composed in 1874 in Milan, Italy, as was Brahms' "Hungarian Dances" composed. And the first zoo in America was established in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania.

Source: "The Timetables of History" 3rd Revised Edition, Bernard Grun, Simon & Schuster, New York 1991, pages 434-435

Harry was born the same year as Thomas J. Watson, Sr., (2/17/1874 - 6/19/1956), the American industrialist who built IBM (International Business Machines, Inc.). It is of interest that on Mr. Watson's 122nd birthday, World chess champion Garry Kasparov beat the IBM super computer "Deep Blue," winning a six-game match in Philadelphia. It took a long time to get the best of Mr. Watson's company! But, do not despair. Two years later, Deep Blue came back to beat Mr. Kasparov! Of course, I like this story, as IBM was my employer in1957-58 and in 1962-69.

Sources:http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Thomas_J._Watson

http://www.research.ibm.com/deepblue/watch/html/c.10.html

http://www.research.ibm.com/deepblue/home/html/b.html

Harry was born the same year as was John D. Rockefeller Jr. (1/29/1874- 5/11/1960), the American philanthropist, who is the third great grand nephew of Johann Philip Rockefeller and Catherina Sharp, Harry's second great grand aunt and uncle.

Harry came to Texas about 1895 at age 21, settling in Georgetown, Williamson County, a town that had been established in 1848 and is the county seat. He worked for the Railroad Express Company a long time. A part of his later occupational life was working in the Williamson County Tax Collector's office. Five years after arriving, Harry married a local Williamson County girl from nearby Taylor, Mattie de Noailles Simons.

He served in the U.S. military in the Spanish American War. It was the conflict that marked the emergence of the United States as a world power. This brief conflict between the United States and Spain took place between April and August 1898, over the issue of the liberation of Cuba. In the course of the war, the United States won possession of Guam, Puerto Rico, and the Philippine Islands. The treaty ending the Spanish-American War was declared in effect on April 11, 1899.

Harry was a Private in Company L of the Texas Infantry. He drew a pension as of November 21, 1927, Certificate #A-8-6-28, Company L, Texas Infantry. In historic narratives about the Spanish AmericanWar, it is noted that then Col. Theodore Roosevelt, the future President of the United States, had a recruiting effort in San Antonio to garner soldiers for the war effort. Roosevelt's recruiting was in the Menger Hotel, that gracious old place of hospitality across the street from the famed Alamo. The recruiting story is available at the hotel today, where we have visited several times. Actually, when my parents lived in San Antonio in their senior years (1968-1981), the restaurant in the Menger Hotel was the favorite place of luxury that my mother relished to attend. Though we do not have information about Harry's recruitment, we believe it most likely took place at this San Antonio event, as it is reasonably close to Georgetown where Harry lived.

Source:General Index to Compiled Services Records of Volunteer Soldiers Who Served During the War With Spain, #M871, Reel #100 andGeneral Index to Pensions, 1861-1934, T-288, Roll #424, Pension#1597454.

My son, Todd Wittman Sharpe, has a telescope I've handed down to him, which we believe was used by Harry in that Spanish American War. Harry is Todd's great grandfather. The telescope had been handed down to me from my father, who is the son of its original owner, Harry.

Harry was Lutheran, hearkening back to our original Sharp ancestor, Otto Scherp, and Mattie was from the Christian Church (Disciples of Christ). They combined their Christian practice by joining the First Presbyterian Church in Georgetown in 1903. They joined upon statement of their faith in Jesus Christ. Both of their sons were baptized there and later made teenage professions of faith in that church.

Though I don't know what his business associates called him (probably just "Harry"), he was always known in the context of the family and in my recollection as Papa Sharpe. In fact, I had such fond association with Papa Sharpe that it was chosen as the name by which I asked my grandchildren to address me.

The Census in 1910 for Georgetown, Williamson County, Texas sites the occupation of Harry as a Deputy Sheriff. The Census of 1920 describes his occupation as Deputy Tax Collector, Williamson County Courthouse. The 1930 Census says his occupation was that of Accountant at the City Collector's Office.

There was an out building behind their home at 1005 Main Street. It was called the Potato House. It was the place where Mattie (his wife) pursued her home industry of potato chip business during the 1930's. Those were the economic depression years of the U.S. economy and many people had to be creative to sustain their families. Long after needing to be used as a potato house, it became the retreat house for Papa Sharpe in his old age, particularly after he was a widower. Sort of his "office away" from the house, where he could be on his own. I remember making visits to that back house to the kindly old grandfather and hearing him tell his stories about the town and life in general. He would sit there amidst the swirl of the pipe tobacco smoke and spin his yarns.

The most fascinating place around the large back yard of Papa Sharpe was the unusually long garage. It could be entered from the back yard of the house on Main Street, but it stretched out behind the neighboring corner house and opened onto the side street. That was a shortcut through which my cousins, Harry and Johnny, and I would go to get to the public park a block or so away for fun and play. The garage was filled with treasures of old pieces of various kinds of machinery, tools and miscellaneous parts. It was a marvel in which to explore.

Papa Sharpe's son, Harry Simons (known as "Dee Dee"), and family lived with them in the old Sharpe home as one big community home. Ultimately, after Papa Sharpe died, the family relented to the urgings of the First Baptist Church next door on the north side to sell the home to the church for its expansion. Years later, that congregation relocated to the new suburbs, but a remnant of it remained, and the church name was changed to the Main Street Baptist Church, as it still is in 2011.

It is of interest to note that John D. Rockefeller, Sr., the world-known petroleum industrialist, donated the church bell to that First Baptist Church. The Sharpe's, I am confident, did not realize it while they were neighbors, but Rockefeller was the second great grand nephew, twice removed of Harry's great Uncle Johann Philip Rockefeller, husband of Carthrina Sharp.

http://www.dasharpe.com/Genealogy/RockefellerSr.html

(Source: The First Baptist Church of Georgetown by Sharon Ducan, an article appearing in the "Williamson County, Texas SesquicentennialHistory" 1986.)

The donation of the church bell also is told in the "Williamson County, Texas, Its History & Its People," by Mrs. Jean Shroyer and Mrs. Hazel Hood, Williamson Genealogical Society, Inc., Round Rock, Texas, 1985, page21.) We do not know the circumstances which brought Rockefeller to know about the need and to donate a bell to the First Baptist Church of Georgetown. My visit in 2005 to the Main Street Baptist Church offices resulted in my being told that an long time member's recollection simply was that another member took it upon his or herself to write a letter of request to Mr. Rockefeller for the bell. Must have been a well worded letter!

The church's initial use of the old Sharpe home was for its children's ministries. Later, new buildings replaced the old Sharpe home.

Harry died in 1951, the year the 22nd amendment to the U.S. Constitution was passed,

limiting the service in the office of President to two terms. It was the year J. D. Salinger published "The Catcher in the Rye," and the "Caine Mutiny" by Herman Wouk earned a Pulitzer Prize.

Source: "The Timetables of History" 3rd Revised Edition, BernardGrun, Simon & Schuster, New York 1991, page 532.

Papa Sharpe is buried at the Odd Fellows Cemetery close by the rear of Southwestern University, alongside of his wife, Mattie de Noailes Simons Sharpe. Subsequently, both of his sons and their wives were buried in the same plot. His brother's wife, Mrs. Alfred L. (Lucy) Sharpe and their son, A. L. Sharpe, Jr., are buried in that plot. His grandson, Johnny, is also buried in that cemetery, but not in the original Sharpe plot, as it if full.

Notes for Mattie de Noailles "Mama Sharpe" Simons:

Mattie de Noailles Simons, my grandmother, was born August 20, 1876, our nation's centennial year. Novelist Jack London was born that year. The National Baseball League was founded. Mattie was born the year that Alexander Graham Bell received a patent for the telephone on March 7, 1876. One month following Mattie's birth, on September 20,1876, Robert Ingersoll (R-IL), a former state attorney general, told a veterans organization: "Every man that loved slavery more than liberty was a Democrat ... I am a Republican, because it is the only free party that ever existed."

Sources: http://www.lucidcafe.com/library/96mar/bell.html http://www.grandoldpartisan.typepad.com/ "The Timetables of History" 3rd Revised Edition, Bernard Grun, Simon &Schuster, New York 1991, pages 436-437

Mattie had that beautiful French middle name of de Noailles. It apparently came from her grandmother, Anastasia de Noailles Lafayette Hewlett. Also that lovely French name was passed on to her granddaughter, Martha de Noailles Sharpe, who was my sister. Indeed, Mattie's brother, Verner, named a daughter, de Noailles Anastasia Simons. The source of that name in this non-French family is a mystery. However, oral tradition has it that the name was taken from a friend of the family. If such is true, that friend probably was a friend to Lemuel Green Hewlett or Rebecca J. Harvey, the parents living in Hopkins County, Kentucky at the time of the birth of Anastasia de Noailles Lafayette Hewlett (Fannie) and all of her siblings.

Mattie lost her Mother when she was only two months old. Her young Mother was only age 20. We do not know the cause of this premature death. Mattie's Father remarried about five years later, but we do not know who, if anybody else, took up the maternal duties for Mattie and older brother, Verner, till the remarriage. It may have been a single-parent task by Jim Simons to care for his son and daughter. However, I suspect he solicited outside help.

After Jim remarried Martha Townes, they bore five sons and a daughter, which were halfsiblings for Mattie and her brother, Verner. Jim, Martha and the family moved to Fort Worth in 1908, but that was eighty ears after Mattie had married Harry Seth Sharpe. Mattie and her family (my father and his brother) continued to live in Georgetown, Williamson County, Texas the rest of her life.

Mattie was a strong wife, mother and was industrious around the house. During the 1930's, when the nation was in the throws of a national economic depression, we are told of two businesses she operated out of their home.

First, she cooked and packaged potato chips for sale. They had a little out building behind their home that was called the Potato House. The potato chip inventor was a cook named

George Crum, allegedly in August 1853. From many brief tellings, that is all I could find out about the man. But other sources mention his racial background, e.g. "Crum was part Indian, part black, a former guide in the Adirondack s (New York state), and in his own way a rather colorful figure in this area" (Gribb 1975). Other times, only his Indian heritage is mentioned (Snack Food Association 1987; Barrett 1941). He is occasionally mentioned in histories of significant African-American figures, but not as often in collections dealing with native Americans. There appears little doubt that he actually existed, was a cook at Moon's Lake House on Saratoga Lake, New York and later, he purchased his own restaurant on the lake.

Source: http://www.geography.ccsu.edu/harmonj/atlas/potchips.htm

Secondly, Mattie created a boarding house setting in their home, whereby she served noon meals to paying customers. Their home was just a couple of short walking blocks from the Williamson County Courthouse square, and so much of the business and courthouse community around the county square patronized this food service. Their clientele included doctors, lawyers and judges.

Mattie lived a full and loving life. She died in 1944 when the nation was in the concluding throws of World War II. Her younger son, Dee Dee, had gone off to the Navy just prior to her death. In that year, the June 6th lading on Normandy shores was made, the Battle of the Bulge took place, Tennessee Williams wrote the "Glass Menagerie," the popular songs that year were "Don't Fence me In," "Rum and Coca Cola," and "Sentimental Journey."

(Source: "The Timetables of History" 3rd Revised Edition, Bernard Grun, Simon & Schuster, New York 1991, pages 522-523)

I remember Mattie in a couple of my family's visits to Georgetown in the early 1940's. My recollections of her are from fond memories. Mattie was a credit, both to the Simons family and to the Sharpe family. I was only age five when she died. Knowing her face probably was kept going for me through photographs, thankfully, that our family had and displayed of her and her husband.

She was an active member of the Presbyterian Church, and had a lot to do with my father's spiritual upbringing that resulted by his going into the Presbyterian ministry.

Mattie lies beside her husband in the Odd Fellows Cemetery in Georgetown, Williamson County, Texas. Both of her sons and their wives also lie next to their husbands.

- 14. **James Herschell Chapman** (son of William Hilliard Judson Chapman and Temperance Honor Jordan) was born on Oct 02, 1853 in Cuthbert, Randolph Country, Georgia. He died on Mar 02, 1925 in Angelina County, Texas. He married **Margaret Lavina "Maggie" Abney** (daughter of William Albert "Albert" Abney Sr. and Martha Jane "Mattie" Dixon) in 1899.
- 15. **Margaret Lavina "Maggie" Abney** (daughter of William Albert "Albert" Abney Sr. and Martha Jane "Mattie" Dixon) was born on Feb 23, 1878 in Angelina County, Texas. She died on Oct 19, 1909 in Angelina County, Texas.

Notes for James Herschell Chapman:

James Herschell Chapman, my maternal grandfather, was born October 2, 1853, the year that Vincent Van Gogh was born in Holland. Van Gogh was destined to become a world famous painter. It was the year that Henry Steinway (Heinrich E. Steinweg, 1797-1871) and his three sons began the New York firm of piano manufacturers. And it was the year that Samuel Colt revolutionized the manufacture of small arms.

Source: "Time Tables of History," Benard Grun, page 419

We understand that James Herschell Chapman migrated from his Georgia roots to East

Texas as a very young man, though we do not have the details about why, how and when that transition was made.

There is family "folk lore" to the effect that James Herschell Chapman owned East Texas land near Beaumont for a while, selling it at agricultural or rates. Some years later, on January 10, 1901, the first great Texas oil well discovery, Spindle Top, was situated on that same land, just south of Beaumont, Jefferson County,Texas, so the story goes. It would be interesting to determine through land deeds if that is true, or if it merely be typical genealogical "evangelastic" reporting?

Dr. Chapman is listed as one of the five doctors practicing in Homer when it still was the Angelina County Seat. Homer was originally named Angelina, and was begun before the 1850's. Dr. J. H. Chapman is listed as one of three investors May 12, 1882, to start the newspaper, The Banner, which was the second publication in Homer. He was an advertiser in the issue of March 2, 1883. He would have been only 30 years old that year.

Dr. Chapman's first wife is Minola Manning. They married in 1878, and she died in 1896. They bore five children. Unfortunately for me, we have no continuous information of their subsequent life and family.

It was his second wife, Margaret Lavina Abney, whom he married in1899, through whom my descending comes. She died in 1909 in one of the yellow fever plagues of those years.

His third wife, Josephine T. Chapman, lived 1868 to 1959. They married in 1899, and she is buried alongside him in the Knight -Glendale Cemetery of Lufkin. They bore no issue. I do not know her maiden or formerly married name, so used Chapman.

"His work was the practice medicine in Angelina County for his Centre career and he was listed as a charter member of the Angelina County Medical Society in 1906. 'Texas Under Many Flags,' by Wharton, said he was educated in the Memphis Hospital Medical College and began practice in Angelina County, Texas in 1873 doing the work of a pioneer doctor over a large section of East Texas."

Source:Robert A. Sonfield, posting on One World Tree, April 13, 2003,e-mail address: Robert@sonfield.com

Dr. Chapman was a Texas Master Mason of the Masonic Lodge organization. This title is surmised, because the newly constructed Scottish Rite Dormitory (in 1922) was for unmarried daughters of Texas Mastor Masons. My mother graduated from the University of Texas in 1925.

It is of interest to observe that in the 1880 U.S. Census of Angelina County, Texas, James Chapman, listed as a 27-year old physician married to a 17 year old wife, Minola, with an infant son. They lived just three houses down the street from the family of William A. Abney and Martha Jane Dixon Abney. In that household was two-year old Margaret Lavina Abney, who became James' second wife 19 years later.

The second wife of Dr. James Herschell Chapman was Margaret (Maggie) Lavina Abney Chapman. They married in 1899, but we have no details about it. She is my maternal grandmother. As noted earlier, he had at least two brothers, Dr. William Paine (Will) Chapman and Captain Robert (Bob) D. Chapman, who also migrated from Georgia, ultimately to Angelina County. It is not known if they came together, but they were all present by the turn of the twentieth century in Angelina County. Dr. Will Chapman, as noted earlier, did appear in the Tyler County, Texas 1880 Census. Both doctors practiced medicine in Angelina County for most of their careers. My mother believed her father, James Herschell Chapman, came to Texas at age 16, which would have been 1869.

The "Lufkin Daily News" article of March 3, 1925 (page 1) about Dr. Chapman's unexpected death reported there were no symptoms to indicate health problems, and that he died

suddenly while sitting in the front of a fireplace at his home, 501 Bremond Avenue, at Fifth street. My inspection of that property in 2017 via satellite view indicated it now is a vacant lot.

It was the year, 1925, that Fitzgerald published "The Great Gatsby," Ernest Hemingway published "In Our Time," and the "New Yorker Magazine" was first published. Trinity College in North Carolina agreed to change its name to Duke University to meet the terms of a \$40 million trust established by James B. Duke, tobacco millionaire. We hope they did not make an ash of themselves!

Source: "Timelines of American History" pages 306-7

Dr. Chapman died Mar 02, 1925, Lufkin, Angelina County, Texas. His burial was Mar 03, 1925 at Knight - Glendale Cemetery of Lufkin, Texas.

Notes for Margaret Lavina "Maggie" Abney:

Margaret Lavina Abney was born Feb 23, 1878 at Angelina County, Texas. Through much of her life, she was known as Maggie. The year of Maggie's birth was quite busy on the national scene. Senator Aaron A. Sargent of California introduced a women's suffrage amendment (permitting women to vote) in the exact words by which it ultimately was adopted after World War I. The amendment was submitted every year until adopted. It finally was adopted as the 19th Amendment to the U.S. Constitution. In her month of birth, the first telephone directory was issued, by the District Telephone Company of New Haven, Connecticut.

In 1878, Thomas Alva Edison patented the phonograph, recording Mary Had A Little Lamb on a cylinder wrapped in tin foil. He also formed the Edison Electric Light Company in New York City. Edison is the 7th cousin, once removed from the wife of the 7th great grandson of Alice Carpenter, the 7th great grandmother of mine.

Speaking of Thomas Edison, one of the premiere inventors in AmericanHistory, he is the sixth cousin, once removed, to United States President, Theodore (Teddy) Roosevelt. Teddy is the fifth cousin to US President Franklin D. Roosevelt, my half eighth cousin. Also,Teddy's niece, Eleanor Roosevelt, married President Franklin D.Roosevelt. So again we see much indirect relationship with very interesting personalities of our historic American stage.

Maggie was the middle wife of three wives of Dr. Chapman, and she was 25 years younger than he. He fathered children in the first two marriages, but none in the third. Maggie died at age 31 in one of the plagues of that day, when her children were only age five and three.

Maggie's middle name, Lavina, probably was taken from her grandmother Dixon's first name. However, for grandmother Dixon's name, we show spellings of as "Lovina" and "Lavinia." So, of the three spellings, we don't know which one is correct or whether there really were two or three different spellings used.

The U.S. Census of 1880 shows Maggie as a young child named Margaret L. Abney in the household of William and Martha Abney, which is the earliest documentation of her parentage that I can find.

Maggie's marriage to Dr. Chapman was in 1899, Angelina County, Texas.

The U. S. Census of 1920 in Lufkin, Angelina County, Texas, Precinct#1, January 21, 1920 enumerated by Miss May Day, shows Maggie as ahead of household with her household residents including two house hold members identified as her grand children by the names of Martha Dixon Chapman, age 15, and Herschel A. Chapman, age 14. It is of interest to see that a 71 year old lady named Mary Utilla was a roomer in the household. That Census

also shows that Maggie's sister, Sarah Dixon Mantooth, her husband, Calvin, and son, Calvin, Jr., still lived in the same block as neighbors, which was true for several decades.

Maggie was born the year that Gilbert & Sullivan produced the famous operetta, "H.M.S. Penafore" at the London Opera Comique Theater. A Yellow fever epidemic killed about 14,000 people in the southern United States, a plague that similarly took Maggie's life in 1909 when my Mother was only five years old.

Source: "The Timetables of History" 3rd Revised Edition, BernardGrun, Simon & Schuster, New York 1991, pages 236-239

Margaret Lavina Abney died Oct 19, 1909, Angelina County, Texas. Her burial was Oct 20, 1909 at the Knight - Glendale Cemetery of Lufkin, Texas.

Generation 5

- 16. **Malachi Wesley Jumper** (son of David Malachi Jumper and Mary Ann Jumper) was born on Jan 27, 1819 in Orangeberg, South Carolina (Lexington District). He died on Apr 28, 1892 in Nettleton, Lee County, Mississippi, near Sidon, Leflore County, Mississippi. He married **Adeline Seymoor** on Jan 08, 1839 in Perry County, Alabama.
- 17. **Adeline Seymoor** was born on May 12, 1823 in Anatanga, Alabama. She died on Sep 01, 1890 in Nettleton, Lee County, Mississippi.

Notes for Malachi Wesley Jumper: Death Notes: Heart Attack

Notes for Adeline Seymoor:

Adeline was born on the third birthday of English nurse Florence Nightingale, who reformed the nursing profession and medical care for soldiers.

Sourece: http://www.florence-nightingale.co.uk/flo2.htm

- 20. John Alexander "Little John" Nason (son of Thomas Griffith "Tommie" Nason and Margaret Ann O'Conner) was born on Oct 30, 1843 in Starkville, Oktibbeha County, Mississippi. He died on Sep 05, 1911 in Ackerman, Choctaw County, Mississippi. He married Sarah Ann Davis (daughter of Presley Davis and Sarah Ann) on Jan 30, 1868 in Chocaw County, Mississippi.
- 21. **Sarah Ann Davis** (daughter of Presley Davis and Sarah Ann) was born on Mar 27, 1852 in Bradley, Mississippi. She died on Feb 25, 1918 in Tomnolen, Choctaw County, Mississippi.

Notes for John Alexander "Little John" Nason:

John enlisted in the Confederate Army at Greensboro, Mississippi.Both he and his father, tommy, were in McQuirk's Regiment.

As an adult, John farmed near his father and borther, Bill, in ChoctawCounty, Mississippi. He was born shortly after his parents had moved there from New York City in 1843. They moved to Choctaw about 1859.

His nick name of "Little John" was to distinguish him from the otherthree John Nasons in the Oktibbeha and Choctaw County area.

Source:Marcia Jackson Cloman, "Journey of Joy - The Nason Family of the Southern United States," The Reprint Company, Publishers, Spartanburg, South Carolina 2005, Page 113.

22. Sheldon Lovick P. Ramsey He married Louise "Lou" Lewis.

23. Louise "Lou" Lewis

Notes for Sheldon Lovick P. Ramsey:

The Ramseys were originally from Scotland. They were Highlanders whowere defeated and went to Ireland.

- 24. **John Elsefer Sharp II** (son of John Elsefer Sharp and Elizabeth Bodine) was born on Jan 25, 1830 in Sharon Spring, Schoharie County, New York. He died on May 18, 1897 in Ravenna, Portage County, Ohio. He married **Sarah Lavenna Kellogg** (daughter of Lansing Kellogg and Caroline Bishop) on Aug 01, 1857 in Maple Grove Cemetery, Ravena, Portage County, Ohio.
- 25. **Sarah Lavenna Kellogg** (daughter of Lansing Kellogg and Caroline Bishop) was born on Feb 07, 1840 in Charlestown, Portage County, Ohio. She died on Aug 01, 1877 in Ravenna, Portage County, Ohio.

Notes for John Elsefer Sharp II:

John Elsefer Sharp II was born Jan 25, 1830 at Sharon Spring, Schoharie County, New York. The year John was born, the 21st President of the United States, Chester A. Arthur. was elected. Emily Dickinson, an American poet, was born. Belva Ann Lockwood was born. She became the first woman lawyer to practice before the Supreme Court and to be nominated for the U. S. Presidency. It was from the Universal Peace Union Party, a minor third political party. John was born the year of the birth of Caroline Astor (9/22/1830 - 10/30/1908), the American aristocratic leader of New York high society.

Sources: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Caroline_Webster_Schermerhorn_Astor "The Timetables of History" 3rd Revised Edition, Bernard Grun, Simon &Schuster, New York 1991, page 392-395.

The first passenger railroad in the United States began service between Baltimore and Elliott's Mills, Maryland on May 24, 1830, the year of John's birth. Later in John's life, he worked for the Erie Railroad. Such was his occupation reflected in the US Census of 1880 for his household.

John is my great grandfather. The family at this stage continued in the Lutheran Church, the historic Christian practice of his ancestry. He moved his family from Sharon Springs, Schoharie County, New York to Ravenna, Portage County, Ohio about 1850. It's a city about 20 miles northeast of Akron, Ohio. It's about 400 miles east of Chicago and about 1,200 miles northeast of where our retirement home is in Aurora, Texas. Here is a background about the city name, Ravenna.

Ravenna [ra'ven:a], the Italian city for which Ravenna, Ohio is named, is a city and *comune* in the Emilia-Romagna region of Italy. The city is inland, but is connected to the Adriatic Sea by a canal. Ravenna was the capital city of the Western Roman Empire from 402 until 476. It was later the capital of the Kingdom of the Ostrogoths and the Exarchate of Ravenna until 751. From that year until the invasion of Franks, it was the seat of the king of the Lombards and equalled to Pavia by Aistulf. It is presently the capital of the Province of Ravenna. At 652.89 km² (252.08 sq mi), Ravenna is the second-largest *comune* in land area in Italy, although it is only a little more than half the size of the largest, Rome.

Though John Elsefer Sharp II was listed as a farmer in the 1860 Census and a stone

mason in the 1870 Census, it is thought that John spent most of his career working on the Erie Railroad. His residence city in 1860 was Sharon Springs, New York and in 1870, the residence was Ravenna, Ohio. The children listed in the household were Alfred L. Sharp, age 12, and Dwight E. Sharp, age 9.

We have located no military record for him during the War Between the States. We conjecture that he worked on the railroad throughout the time of that War.

Shown in the 1880 Census for John's household was a 19-year-old white female servant named Phoebe Roberts. This indicates some degree affluence for the family, to have had a live-in servant. The Census indicated that their residence was 319 Lincoln Avenue, Ravenna, Ohio, less than a mile north from the Portage County Courthouse in downtown Ravenna. In that 1880 Census, John was identified as a Railroad Agent again.

John's first wife, Sarah Lavenna Kellogg Sharp died at the young age of 37 on Aug 01, 1877. John married his second wife, Mary Thompson Cope, on Jul 26, 1878. Therefore Mary was cited in the 1880 Census as John's spouse. That 1880 Census listed children Dwight E. Sharp, age 18, and Harry S. Sharp, age 5. Their older brother, Alfred L Sharp departed from the household by 1880. He would have been age 22 in 1880.

John died May 18, 1897, the year William McKinley was inaugurated as President of the United States, later to be assassinated. That year, the electron was discovered by J. J. Thomson that year, and it was Queen Victoria's Diamond Jubilee year. Queen Victoria is my 29th cousin, four times removed.

Source: "The Timetables of History" 3rd Revised Edition, Bernard Grun, Simon & Schuster, New York 1991, page 450-451.

Notes for Sarah Lavenna Kellogg:

Sarah Lavenna Kellogg was born February 7, 1840, the year James Fenimore Cooper's best seller was published, "The Pathfinder." Claude Monet, famous French painter, was born in 1840, as was Peter Ilich Tchaikovsky, Russian composer... "The 1812 Overture," etc.

Source: "The Timetables of History" 3rd Revised Edition, Bernard Grun, Simon & Schuster, New York 1991, pages 406-407

Sarah was born just three days before Britain's Queen Victoria married Prince Albert of Saxe Coburg-Gotha.

Source:http://www.spartacus.schoolnet.co.uk/PRvictoria.htm

Sarah's marriage into the Sharp clan truly brought a strong heritage into our family. Besides being our link to the descendants of Plymouth Colony Governor William Bradford, the Kellogg family includes Frank Billings Kellogg, fifth cousin once removed, a US Senator, US Secretary of State who also was the 1929 winner of the Nobel Peace Prize. The Kellogg's also have Will Keith Kellogg, the founder of the cereal company by that name, who was Sarah's fifth cousin. Another Kellogg relative was Charles Curtis, a fifth cousin once removed, who was the 31st Vice President of the United States (1929-1933). He served with President Herbert Hoover. Sarah is the 5th cousin to Will Keith Kellogg, the inventor of corn flakes dry serial, who went on to create quite a fortune through that enterprise.

Important to Texans is that we think Sarah is the half fifth cousin to John (Johnny) Benjamin Kellogg, Jr., one of the valiant men who died in the Battle of the Alamo on March 6, 1836, fighting for the independence of Texas from Mexico. That was less than four years before Sarah was born. We say we think this, as the entire line cannot be confirmed by my research, and there is some debate among Kellogg researchers about those connections.

- 26. James Alfred "Jim" Simons (son of Alfred K. Simons and Anastasia de Noailles Lafayette "Fannie" Hewlett) was born on Jan 31, 1852 in Madisonville, Hopkins County, Kentucky. He died on Sep 30, 1932 in Fort Worth, Trarrant County, Texas. He married Charrie Elizabeth "Bettie" Eubank (daughter of William White Eubank and Martha J. Sanders) on Jan 11, 1874 in Circleville, Williamson County, Texas.
- 27. **Charrie Elizabeth "Bettie" Eubank** (daughter of William White Eubank and Martha J. Sanders) was born on Apr 05, 1856 in Milan, Texas. She died on Oct 26, 1876 in Circleville, Williamson County, Texas.

Notes for James Alfred "Jim" Simons:

James Alfred Simons, who was called Jim, is the only son of Alfred K. Simons and Anastasia de Noailles Lafayette Hewlett Simons, my second great grandparents. Jim was born January 31, 1852 in Madisonville, Kentucky.

In Jim's birth year, 1852, Franklin Pierce was elected 14th President of the United States. Charles Dickens published "Bleak House," and Harriet Beecher Stowe published "Uncle Tom's Cabin," a book whose story would stir up a nation in turmoil over slavery issues that, in part, led to the War Between the States, beginning some eight years later. In 1852, African explorer David Livingston ventured into Zambezi 1852. And get this: The United States imported sparrows from Germany as a defense against caterpillars! I'd say that was a foul (fowl) decision!

(Source: "The Timetables of History" 3rd Revised Edition, Bernard Grun, Simon & Schuster, New York 1991, pages 418-419)

In the second year after the Simons' move from Kentucky, Texas was linked by telegraph on February 14, 1854 with the rest of the United States, when a connection between New Orleans and Marshall, Texas was completed.

Source:http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/February_14

Shortly after Jim's family moved to Texas in 1853, and his father died, his mother remarried, which was to Mr. Charles Patrick Vance, about fourteen months later. Jim was taken into the home of Charles Vance, his step-father. This is evidenced by Jim's appearing as an eight year old household member of Mr. Vance's home in the 1860 Census in Lexington, Burleson County, Texas. Burleson County is just a few miles east of Williamson County, with Milam County in between. Jim's step-father and his mother bore four sons and one daughter.

Jim still resided in the Charles P. Vance household, according to the 1870 Census in Lexington, Burleson County, Texas, and he is listed still as being at school. He is reported as being a member of the firm of Simons, Root & Company of Taylor. He was educated in the common schools of Burleson County.

Jim is reported to have operated a general store in Circleville for Charles P. Vance, as early as 1873. He moved the store to Taylorsville in October, 1876. Later the town name changed to Taylor. (source: Land of Good Water, page 329) That store was called Vance & Company, and reportedly was capitalized with a beginning \$10,000.

Jim was raised in the Christian Church, that being the Christian choice of his step-father.

Charles P. Vance appeared in the 1870 Census in Caldwell, Burleson County, Texas (Texas 1870 Federal Census Index, Page 155). Charles P. Vance appeared in the 1920 Census in Houston, Harris County, Texas, indicating an age of 91, and indicating having

been born in 1829 in Kentucky. This was was Jim's step-father. Through Mr. Haydon Fouke of Lecanto, Florida, a typed version of a nine page hand-written biography written by Charles Patrick Vance is in my files and has enhanced my writings about those in that family line, including Jim.

Jim married Elizabeth Charrie Eubank (Bettie) in 1874 in Circleville, my great grandmother. Then Jim moved the store as his own to be among the merchants opening stores in the new Taylor by October 1876. The Galveston Daily News June 4, 1876, described the new town as destined to become one of the largest, if not the principal, town between Texarkana and Austin. Lots were auctioned off for \$150 to \$250.

(Source: "Land of Good Water" Clara Stearns Scarbrough, Williamson County Sun Publishers, Georgetown, Texas 1973, pages 327-329)

Jim and Bettie bore two children, Verner Alfred and Mattie deNoailles. She is my grandmother. Bettie died in 1876, only two months after my grandmother was born. After Bettie died, Jim remarried Martha C. (Mattie) Townes in 1881. He and Mattie bore six children: Dick, James, Jr., Ruth, Robert, John Charles and Thomas Shirley. Interesting, then, that Jim had a new wife named Mattie and a daughter from his first marriage named Mattie!

Jim and was instrumental in the founding of the First Christian Church of Taylor, Williamson County, Texas. He was the second Superintendent of the Sunday School of the new church. The historical marker on the church building indicates its founding December 9, 1877. The cornerstone on the building still erected as we (my wife and I) visited it March 2, 2011 indicates an 1891 date for its construction. It tells us that the Rev. Mr. J. B. Sweeney was pastor, and there was a seven-member Building Committee listed. Jim was one of the Committee members and his step father, C. P. Vance, was another Committee member.

Jim Simons was a Democrat in political views, and served several terms as an Alderman in the city of Taylor.

James A. Simons served as Postmaster of Circleville, Williamson County1874-75. He was Postmaster of Taylor for 1877 and 1895.

(Source: "Land of Good Water" Clara Stearns Scarbrough, Williamson County Sun Publishers, Georgetown, Texas 1973, page 421 & 456)

What would become named the town of Taylor in Williamson County, Texas was first platted and opened for public bidding on lots in 1876. This was done by the Texas Land Company with land it had purchased from the International and Great Northern Railroad that was running a rail line through the area. It was first called Taylorsville, but later it was shortened. It was named by Moses Taylor, one of the original projectors of the I&GN RR, and one of its largest investors. By 1878, the town had a population of about 1,000 and the "Bradstreet Book" for that year listed 32 firms doing business.

(Source: "Land of Good Water" Clara Stearns Scarbrough, WilliamsonCounty Sun Publishers, Georgetown, Texas 1973, pages 304-306)

Jim was instrumental in organizing the Building & Loan Association of Taylor in 1885, of which he was President.

My mother, Martha Dixon Chapman Sharpe, gave me a note late in her life (1970's) reporting that Jim moved from Williamson County to Fort Worth and farmed on the old Denton Highway about five miles north of the Tarrant County Court House, but this move is not dated in the note. His obituary, an undated copy of which I have from my cousin, Harry Franklin Sharpe, indicates that Jim moved to Fort Worth in 1908, establishing a Jersey cattle dairy farm. The clipping indicates he took a leadership role in the dairy industry. This dairy land is reported to be on Old Denton Road, probably in what today is the town of Saginaw,

Texas.

Descendants I've interviewed recently (2004) still living in Fort Worth and who were alive during the time of the farm say they cannot really remember exactly where it was, with all the development since then in Fort Worth. As best as I can estimate, I believe it may have been land located on which the intersection of Interstate Highway 35W and Interstate Highway 820, or very near to it on the west side.

In 1908, things were popping around Fort Worth. It was coming into its own as a city. Just the year before, the Flatiron Building opened at Ninth and Houston Streets. At seven stories tall, it was the tallest building in the Southwest. As this report is updated in 2011, the building still stands as the oldest office building in Fort Worth. In 1908, the North side Coliseum was built in the Stockyards to house the Southwest Exposition and Fat Stock Show. In 1908, the Mail-Telegram newspaper was purchased by the Fort Worth Star, to become known as the Fort Worth Star-Telegram newspaper. It became perhaps the most influential paper in North and West Texas. Recently, I've gotten to be friends with the Editorial Page Editor, a woman named J. R. Labbe. She published some photographs and stories I wrote in 2009 surrounding the Presidential Inauguration of Barak Omama in Washington, D.C. Actually, it has been my privilege to publish photographs and notes in three north Texas newspapers for the Presidential Inaugurations of 2001, and 2005 as well.

It was the following year, 1909, that the Fort Worth Zoo opened as the first Zoo in Texas.

Source: "Fort Worth 2005/06 travel guide," the official publication of the Fort Worth Convention & Visitors Bureau.

In the 1930 U.S. Census in Tarrant County, Precinct #1, District #99, Jim's family consisted of himself, his wife, Martha, and a daughter, Ruth. They owned their home and lived next door to their son and his family, Dick Townes Simons. Dick and his family rented their house for \$30 per month, according to the Census report.

Jim's age at death is cited as 80 in the obituary clipping mentioned above. He was survived by his second wife, Martha Townes Simons, and their daughter, Miss Ruth Simons of Fort Worth, and six sons: Verner A. Simons of Lincoln, Nebraska (who was the son from his first marriage); from Fort Worth: Dick Townes Simons; James A. Simons, Jr.; Robert V. Simons; and J. Charles Simons; from Tyler, Texas, Mr. Shirley Simons. Not mentioned in the obituary is his daughter from his first marriage, Mattie de Noailles Simons Sharpe [my grandmother], who was residing with her husband in Georgetown, Williamson County, Texas at the time. She did not die till 1944. We have no idea why Verner from Jim's first marriage appeared in the obituary, but Nattie from his first marriage did not appear.

The obituary for James Alfred Simons reports that the funeral would be at the Simons' home on the Old Denton Road. The Rev. Mr. I. D. Anderson would officiate. Burial would be at the Greenwood Cemetery, which is located at 3100 White Settlement Road, just west of University Drive, and just north of the Cultural District of Fort Worth. The main entrance going north is Live Oak lane. The Simons family plot is in the Benediction Garden Section 35, in plot #29. It is right on the curbside of Live Oak, just north of the Flower Circle on the right side of the lane. I first visited that site on May 4, 2004 and located twelve of the Simons family grave sites. My wife, Suzanne, and I were married 30 years later to the exact day that Jim died.

In 1932, the year of his graduation to heaven, the famous Lindbergh kidnaping took place. The "Grand Canyon Suite" was composed by Ferde Grofe. Amelia Earhart became the first woman to cross the Atlantic in a solo flight. Franklin D. Roosevelt, my half eight cousin, was elected President of the United States, the first of the four such national elections he would win. The Pulitzer prize for "The Good Earth" was awarded to Pearl S. Buck. And the 29th annual World Series, September 28-October 2, was won by the New York Yankees, who swept the Chicago Cubs in four games, during which Jim died.

Source: Gorton Carruth, "Encyclopedia of American Facts & Dates,"Harper & Row, Publishers, New York, 1st edition 1817, 8th edition1987, pages 490-493.

James (Jim) Alford Simons, Sr. was a strong Texas citizen who left a big record of diligence and contribution to communities where he lived from Central Texas to North Texas. He symbolizes truly what a family patriarch should represent.

Notes for Charrie Elizabeth "Bettie" Eubank:

Bettie, as Charrie Elizabeth Eubank was known, was born April 5, 1856,the same year as was born the man destined to become the 28th President of the United States (1913-21), Woodrow Wilson [12/28/1856 -2/3/1924].

Source:http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Woodrow_Wilson

Bette was the seventh child born out of ten children in the William and Martha Eubank household, but the first to be born in Texas! The family moved from Kentucky to Texas sometime between Bettie's 1856 birth and the 1854 birth of her immediately older brother, William S. Eubank, who was born in Kentucky.

Bettie was raised in the Christian Church.

Bettie died at the young age of 20, just two months following the birth of her daughter, Mattie de Noailles Simons, who is my grandmother. We do not know the cause of Bettie's death, but it may have been connected with conditions surrounding the recent birth. Earlier, at age 18, she had given birth to Verner, Mattie's older brother.

- 28. William Hilliard Judson Chapman (son of William D. Chapman and Elizabeth Cowan) was born on Apr 17, 1808 in Charleston, South Carolina. He died on Sep 10, 1884 in Cuthbert, Randolph County, Georgia. He married Temperance Honor Jordan (daughter of Lewis Joseph Jordan) in 1830.
- 29. **Temperance Honor Jordan** (daughter of Lewis Joseph Jordan) was born on Jan 09, 1812 in Charleston, South Carolina. She died on Nov 04, 1860 in Randolph County, Georgia.

Notes for William Hilliard Judson Chapman:

William H. J. Chapman sold land to three men: Lewis J. Jordan, Duncan Jordan and Willoughby Jordan. It was for Lot No. 116, 162.5 acres to 175 acres. The document was witnessed by Elizabeth Brown, William's mother, on October 3, 1893, secured by three promissory notes issued to to William by James Cross, with note being made that 1/8th of an acre is a grave yard. Today, this is in part of the Town of Grovania, Houston County, Georgia.

William D. Chapman, in the Confederate Army, was paid as a private and as a sergeant in Captain Uriah Goodwyn's Company in the 3rd Regiment of South Carolina Continental Troops, commanded by Col. WilliamThompson.

The US Census of 1860 listing the family in Randolph County, Georgia, lists all of the children we believe were in the family, except the eldest, a daughter named Mary Ann. She married in 1854 and, of course, was out of the household by 1860.

William is my great grandfather.

Notes for Temperance Honor Jordan:

Temperance was born the year that Charles Dickens (2/7/1812 -6/9/1870), the famous English novelist, was born.

Source:http://www.victorianweb.org/authors/dickens/dickensbio1.html

Church rolls for 1835 in Haynesville, near Perry, Houston County, Georgia show along with William Chapman, Temperance Chapman and an Elizabeth Brown all listed as church members.

Source:One World Tree posted April 13, 2003 by Robert Sonfield ofHouston, Texas, e-mail address: Robert@sonfield.com

- 30. **William Albert "Albert" Abney Sr.** (son of Paul Collins Abney and Margaret Elvira "Maggie" Fullerton) was born on May 21, 1853 in Louisiana. He died on Nov 07, 1913 in Lufkin, Angelina County, Texas. He married **Martha Jane "Mattie" Dixon** (daughter of Felix Benedict Dixon and Lovinia Shanks) on Jan 27, 1876 in San Augustine County, Texas.
- 31. **Martha Jane "Mattie" Dixon** (daughter of Felix Benedict Dixon and Lovinia Shanks) was born on Nov 27, 1853 in San Augustine, San Augustine County, Texas. She died on Apr 27, 1928 in Lufkin, Angelina County, Texas.

Notes for William Albert "Albert" Abney Sr.:

William Albert Abney, Sr. was born May 21, 1853 somewhere in Louisiana. He migrated to Lufkin at an early, but unknown age to us. He became one of Lufkin's earliest merchants. He was known as Albert. Albert and his wife, Mattie, are my great grandparents. Calvin Mantooth was his partner in the firm of Mantooth & Abney, established in 1884. Calvin was the husband of Albert's sister-in-law, Sarah Dixon.

Albert's brother, James Addison Abney, was married to Susanna Elizabeth Davis Abney, the niece of the President of the Confederate States of America, Jefferson Davis. It is interesting to note that the first wife of Jefferson Davis was Sarah Knox Taylor Davis, who also was related to Albert Abney, Sr. here as his 30th cousin, three times removed!

Calvin Mantooth and William Abney advertised dealing in dry goods, clothing, notions, hats, boots, shoes, groceries, hardware, tinware, cutlery, tobaccos, can goods, etc. They advertised a generous inventory at all times, and "low figures" when items were purchased for cash. The store was located on Cotton Square.

William served as Postmaster for Lufkin, and was on the Lufkin City Commission.

The 1880 Census ties together William A. Abney with Martha Jane Abney, respectively age 27 and 26, as parents then of Margaret L., a daughter age 2 and Felix B., a son age 5.

The Census report in 1900 for Angelina County listed William's occupation as a farm mechanic.

William died the year of the first Army-Notre Dame football game. Little-known Notre Dame defeated Army by using the forward pass. This victory helped popularize the game by showing that a small, clever team could beat a large, powerful one.

Source: "The Timetables of American History" Page 287

Notes for Martha Jane "Mattie" Dixon:

Martha Jane (Mattie) Dixon Abney is my great grandmother. According to the 1900 Census in Angelina County, Texas, Martha Jane & family lived next door to her sister, Sarah, who was the second wife of Calvin Mantooth.

Mattie's birth year, 1853, witnessed significant events. The U.S. Sailing Fleet under Commodore Matthew Perry arrived in Edo Bay (nowTokyo Bay), Japan, seeking protection for shipwrecked U.S. seamen and the opening of Japanese ports to trade. Charles Lewis Tiffany established Tiffany & Company in New York City, a jewelry firm which remains world famous for its exquisite jewelry designs even today. The New York Central Railroad was formed by consolidating ten other railroads. A yellow fever epidemic hit nearby New Orleans, Louisiana, taking the lives of more than 5,000 people over two years.

Source:"The Timetables of American History," Laurence Urdang, Pages 208-209

Mattie and Albert gave issue to children from 1878 till 1894. The1880 US Census shows Mattie residing as the wife of William Abney in Lufkin, Texas, with her indicated age being 26. Their 1876 marriage was in Mattie's hometown of nearby San Augustine, San AugustineCounty, Texas.

Generation 6

32. **David Malachi Jumper** (son of Samuel Jumper and Elizabeth Crim) was born in 1792. He married **Mary Ann Jumper**.

33. Mary Ann Jumper

Notes for David Malachi Jumper:

Most of David's descendants migrated into Monroe and Lee Counties after the War Between the States.

- 40. **Thomas Griffith "Tommie" Nason** (son of Lancaster Nason and Mary Ann Griffith) was born on Aug 27, 1823 in Dublin, Ireland. He died in 1904 in Choctaw County, Mississippi. He married **Margaret Ann O'Conner** (daughter of William O'Conner and Nancy Jane) about 1839 in New York City, New York.
- 41. **Margaret Ann O'Conner** (daughter of William O'Conner and Nancy Jane) was born in Feb 1825 in Ireland. She died after 1908 in Choctaw County, Mississippi.

Notes for Margaret Ann O'Conner:

Ann work as a girl in the factories of New York. She could sew withher fingers so that you could not find the stitches. She lived anddied a member of the Irish Catholic Church, having never attended aProtestant Church.

42. **Presley Davis** He married **Sarah Ann**.

43. Sarah Ann

- 46. **Wiley Lewis** (son of Samuel Lewis) was born on Jan 28, 1809 in North Carolina. He died on Dec 11, 1887 in Mathiston, Mississippi.
- 48. **John Elsefer Sharp** (son of George P. Sharp and Margaret Rebecca Teater) was born on Jul 16, 1787 in Germantown, Columbia County, NY. He died on May 22, 1862 in Sharon Spings, Schoharie County, New York. He married **Elizabeth Bodine** about 1812.
- 49. **Elizabeth Bodine** was born about 1797 in Montgomery County, New York. She died on Jul 07, 1860 in Sharon Springs, New York.

Notes for John Elsefer Sharp:

John Elsefer Sharp spent all of his life in New York state. He was born in 1787, just as the nation was being born and was trying to learn how to govern itself. He is my second great grandfather. I am descended through his second wife, Elizabeth Bodine. His first wife died, whose name was Eva Markle. John and Eva bore nine children. John and Elizabeth bore four children.

The New York State Assembly imposed duties on foreign goods. The Philadelphia Convention met to frame what became the United States Constitution, which was signed that year and the ratification process by the states began. The United States Federal Government was formally established in 1789. The Inauguration of the first United States President, George Washington, was done in New York City on April 30, 1789. Future U.S. President John Adams wrote "<u>A Defense of the Constitution of Government of the U.S.A</u>." President Adams was the husband of Abigail Smith, a 29th cousin, four times removed to me. About that same time, another future U.S. President, James Madison, wrote, "<u>The Vices of the Political System of the United States</u>." President Monroe is my 31st cousin, twice removed.

American inventor John Fitch (1743-1798) launched a steamboat in 1787 to operate on the Delaware River. The Dollar currency was introduced in the United States.

Source: "The Timetables of History" 3rd Revised Edition, Bernard Grun, Simon & Schuster, New York 1991, pages 364-365.

The 1850 U.S. Census report shows for his household to have himself (age 62), his wife, Elizabeth (53), and children Elsefer (20), Thomas (20), Ellen (16), Edward Ishaw (5) and Elizabeth Ishaw (49) (The Ishaws probably were servants.) John's occupation was "none," and Elsefer's was Mason. The value of real estate owned was \$300. John and Elizabeth (parents) were indicated as unable to read or write. Their son, Thomas was indicated as having attended school within the past year, as did the 5 year old servant girl.

John is my great, great grandfather. Suzanne and I located the gravesite of John and Elizabeth in Sharon Springs, New York while on an exploratory trip in 1988. Our photographs of this grave site represents the oldest grave markers we have discovered in my Sharpe lineage.

Actually, we located a public campground nearby and went into the little town to what may have been the only eating establishment. We had a very friendly conversation with the waitress, who learned of the genealogical interest for our visit. She immediately put us in touch with the town genealogist. The genealogist ably led us to the cemetery, where we discovered our family members.

Truly, it was a fun and rewarding experience, and I cannot say enough about the winsomeness of those citizens for us in that little, beautiful New York town of Sharon Springs, New York.

Notes for Elizabeth Bodine:

Elizabeth Bodine was born about 1797 in Montgomery County, New York. She was the second wife of John Elsefer Sharp, whose first wife, Ava Markle, died after bearing nine children. Elizabeth and John bore four children.

She is my great, great grandmother. I am descended through John Elsfer Sharp II, the first of the four children born by John and Elizabeth.

50. Lansing Kellogg (son of Bradford Kellogg and Mary Polly "Polly" Thompson) was born on Dec 24, 1806 in Hudson, Ohio. He died about 1882. He married Caroline Bishop (daughter

of David Bishop and Sarah Kennedy) on Feb 08, 1826 in Preble, Ohio.

51. **Caroline Bishop** (daughter of David Bishop and Sarah Kennedy) was born on Oct 09, 1809 in Ohio. She died on Jan 02, 1872.

Notes for Caroline Bishop:

Caroline was born in 1809, the same year as was born Louis Braille(1/4/1809 - 1/6/1852), the French educator and inventor of the Braillesystem which enabled blind people to be able to read.

Source:http://www.afb.org/braillebug/louis_braille_bio.asp

Importantly to American history, Caroline was born the same yeat thatAbraham Lincoln, the 16th president of the United States, was born inpresent-day Larue County, Ky.

Source:http://sc94.ameslab.gov/TOUR/alincoln.html

- 52. Alfred K. Simons (son of Philip J. "Phil" Simons and Delia King) was born on Mar 04, 1827 in Kentucky. He died on Jul 14, 1853 in Milam County, Texas. He married Anastasia de Noailles Lafayette "Fannie" Hewlett (daughter of Lemuel Green Hewlett and Rebecca J. Harvey) before 1852.
- 53. Anastasia de Noailles Lafayette "Fannie" Hewlett (daughter of Lemuel Green Hewlett and Rebecca J. Harvey) was born on Feb 12, 1832 in Hopkins County, Kentucky. She died on Oct 13, 1891 in Taylor, Williamson County, Texas.

Notes for Alfred K. Simons:

Alfred K. Simons, my second great grand father, was born March 4, 1827, the year that Fort Leavenworth was built on the Missouri River, near present-day Kansas City. The first book of poems was published by Edgar AllanPoe, "Tamerlane and Other Poems," printed in Boston, and it received scant attention. James Fenimore Cooper published "The Prairie," which became a best seller. The first Mardi Gras celebration in New Orleans was initiated by French-American students, who returning home on holiday, organized a procession of street maskers on Shrove Tuesday. And, lastly, the first swimming school in the United States opened in Boston. Students included John James Audubon, the famous bird painter, and former President James Quincy Adams, my 30th cousin, three times removed.

Source: Gorton Carruth, "Encyclopedia of American Facts & Dates,"Harper & Row, Publishers, New York, 1st edition 1817, 8th edition1987, pages 176-177.

Alfred moved his family from Kentucky to Texas about 1853. He died almost immediately in July 1853 in Milam County, Texas. He was a member of the Old School Presbyterian Church.

Actually, part of western Milam County later become Williamson County. It may be that they had settled in Circleville in Williamson County, but that he just died while over in adjacent Milam County.

The remains of Alfred K. Simons were removed in March 1917 from the Locklin Cemetery in San Gabriel, Texas to the Taylor Cemetery (Taylor, Williamson County, TX). His remains were placed in proximity to that of his daughter-in-law, Charrie Elisabeth Simons [my great grandmother], whose remains also were removed in March of 1917 from the Circleville Cemetery to the Taylor Cemetery.

Source: Lambert, Ireta Simons, written note given me when we visited in Fort Worth, Tess on August 18, 2005. Ireta died April 4, 2007.

Notes for Anastasia de Noailles Lafayette "Fannie" Hewlett:

Fannie, as Anastasia de Noailles Lafayette Hewlett was known, was born February 12, 1832, which was on the 23rd birthday of future President Abraham Lincoln, my 30th cousin, three times removed. In 1832, "Swiss Family Robinson," the classic novel for children by John and Rudolph Wyss, was published for the first time in the United States, nearly 20 years after its appearance abroad. Andrew Jackson was elected President to his second term, defeating Henry Clay. Martin Van Buren was elected Vice President, as in those days, the Vice President was which ever candidate who was in second place in the Electoral College vote.

Source: Gorton Carruth, "Encyclopedia of American Facts & Dates,"Harper & Row, Publishers, New York, 1st edition 1817, 8th edition1987, pages 188-190.

Fannie is the name recorded in the 1910 US Census for Taylor,Williamson County, Texas as the wife of Charles P. Vance. That Census entry indicates that it was said both of her parents were born in Maryland. However, other information we've recorded indicates Kentucky births for them. So, as often happens, uncertainty prevails!

The 1870 Census lists her as a wife, born in Kentucky, 1832, by the name of Ann S. W. This Census report was in Lexington, Burleson County, Texas. The 1880 Census, Precinct #6, Williamson County, Texas, identifies her only the initials, "A. D. L."

Apparently these are all the same wife, conjecturing that, based upon the Census indication of her being Kentucky born from 1832.

Her second name, de Noailles, was passed on to her granddaughter, Mattie de Noailles Simons (who is my grandmother). Also that lovely French name was passed on to her second great granddaughter, Martha deNoailles Sharpe (who is my sister). In addition, that name was given to her great granddaughter, de Noailles Anistasias Simons Philipps, daughter of Verner Alfred Simons. The source of that name in this non-French family is a mystery. However, oral tradition has it that the name was taken from a friend of the family. If such is true, that friend probably was a friend to Lemuel Green Hewlett or Rebecca J. Harvey, all of Hopkins County, Kentucky at the time of the birth of Fannie and all of her siblings.

Fanny's second marriage was to Charles Patrick Vance, by whom she gave issue to three sons and a daughter. In addition, James Alford Simons from her first marriage, was taken into the Vance home and raised.

Fanny died in 1891, which is the year when later on, the First Christian Church was erected. She and Charles had been instrumental in its founding December 9, 1877. The church's cornerstone shows Fanny's second husband, Charles, and her son for her first marriage, James A. Simons, both were on the seven-member Building Committee, as cited on the church's cornerstone.

In the year Fanny died, 1891, a charter was granted to Rice Institute, founded by William Marsh Rice, in Houston, Texas. Also, a patent for a motion picture camera, the first in its field, was filed by Thomas A. Edison. Edison, one of the premiere inventors in American History, is the sixth cousin, once removed, to United States President, Theodore (Teddy) Roosevelt. Teddy is the fifth cousin to President Franklin Delano Roosevelt, my half eighth cousin, Alice Carpenter being our seventh great grandmother and ancestor in common. This is from my father's Sharpe family line.

Source: Gorton Carruth, "Encyclopedia of American Facts & Dates,"Harper & Row, Publishers, New York, 1st edition 1817, 8th edition1987, page 361.

- 54. William White Eubank (son of Joseph E. Lewis Eubank and Elizabeth Glenn White) was born on Apr 13, 1813 in Glasgow, Barren County, Kentucky. He died on Aug 21, 1876 in Circleville, Williamson County, Texas. He married Martha J. Sanders on Oct 22, 1840 in Barren, Kentucky.
- 55. **Martha J. Sanders** was born on Apr 12, 1824 in Barren County, Kentucky. She died in 1870 in Williamson County, Texas.

Notes for William White Eubank:

This family was among the early settlers in Milam County, in that partthat later became in Williamson County, Texas. This was a farmfamily.

In the Census of 1870 in Williamson County, an occupation is notlisted for William Eubank, but his 20 year old son living in hishousehold is listed with the occupation of farmer. The familyprobably was in hard economic straights, as it indicated they owned noreal estate and that the total value of their personal goods was only\$500. That Census also showed that this household lived next door toWilliam's brother, Joseph, and his wife, Mary, and their son, Henry.

- 56. William D. Chapman (son of Stephen Chapman and Zerviah Sanger) was born in Nov 1747 in South Carolina. He died on Mar 13, 1813 in Jones County, Georgia. He married Elizabeth Cowan in 1785 in Sullivan's Island, South Carolina.
- 57. Elizabeth Cowan was born in 1769. She died in 1846 in South Carolina.

Notes for William D. Chapman:

William D. Chapman married Elizabeth Cowan in Sullivan?s Island, SouthCarolina in 1785. She was born in South Carolina and died there in1846. William D. Chapman was paid as a private and as a sergeant inCaptain Uriah Goodwyn?s Company in the 3rd Regiment of South CarolinaContinental Troops, commanded by Col. William Thompson in the AmericanRevolutionary War.

William D. Chapman's death is recorded in the Georgia Journal of Millidgeville, Georgia, evidenced by a notice that in Jones County, Elizabeth Chapman, Administristratix of the William Chapman Estate, would be selling a residence on September 3, 1814. His actual date ofdeath is not known, but must have been between his ability to fatherWilliam Hilliard Judson Chapman, born April 17, 1808, and somereasonable time prior to the 1814 newspaper notice of Elizabeth beinghis estate's Administristratix.

- 58. **Lewis Joseph Jordan** was born about 1780. He died on Oct 27, 1840 in Perry, Houston County, Georgia. He married an unknown spouse before 1810.
- 60. **Paul Collins Abney** (son of Joseph Duncan Abney and Sarah Searcy) was born on Mar 24, 1829 in Hinds County, Mississippi. He died on May 23, 1894 in Angelina County, Texas. He married **Margaret Elvira "Maggie" Fullerton** (daughter of James Fullerton and Adaline Heflin) on Dec 29, 1845 in Neshoba County, Mississippi.
- 61. **Margaret Elvira "Maggie" Fullerton** (daughter of James Fullerton and Adaline Heflin) was born on Oct 18, 1829 in Pickens County, Alabama. She died on Dec 27, 1920.

Notes for Paul Collins Abney:

Paul Collins Abney is my great, great grandfather, my having descended directly from him and his only wife, Margaret Elvira Fullerton Abney.

One source claims his birthplace was Hinds County, Mississippi, where the State Capital, Jackson, is the County Seat. Another source claims his birthplace was Rankin County, Mississippi, which the adjacent county immediately to the east of Hinds County. In both cases, the proximity is close. After all, many people are born in a county or city not the location of their family's residence.

Now, 1829, the year of Paul's birth, was the year before Indians ceded the land to the advancing march of the settling white people. AndrewJackson was inaugurated President of the United States earlier that month, the seventh president, and the first successful candidate of the Democratic Party. He was noted, among other things, for introducing at this time the ?spoils? system of politics where Federal jobs were given to people by showing political party preference. This was the year William A. Burt, a Massachusetts surveyor, invented the?typographer,? an early kind of typewriter. And 1829 was the year of the first luxury hotel in the New World opened ... The Tremont Hotel in Boston. It?s opening was celebrated with \$100 per plate dinners, with such American history notables as Daniel Webster and EdwardEverett attending.

Paul Collins Abney is steeped in significant European history. His earliest recorded ancestor is Halfdan Vanha Sveidasson "the Old,"whose title was the Earl of the Uplands in Norway, Viking heritage, who lived in the 700's A.D. Those Vikings immigrated to the northern coast of France in what became known as Normandy. That lineage continued and contained William, the Duke of Normandy, who led his people across the English Channel to conquer the English Crown fromKing Harold at the Battle of Hastings in 1066. William the Conqueror was crowned King of England on Christmas day, 1066. He is Paul's 6th cousin, 23 times removed.

Later in the Abney line of descent appears Sir Thomas Abney of Willesley, who served as Mayor of London circa 1690-1700, and was one of the founders of the Bank of London. Sir Thomas was Paul Collins Abney's 4th cousin, 4 times removed, and 8 times removed to me. He was a leading layman at the St. Thomas' Church at Willesley. In 1712,Sir Thomas took into his castle to live for his last 33 years, the musician who wrote much of the hymnody sung in that church. That hymn writer, many will recognize, was Dr. Isaac Watts, author of many, many hymns appearing in church hymnals yet today. He is known in some circles as the Father of Hymnody, especially in England.

Around 1830, Mississippi was very undeveloped. The native ChoctawIndians were forced by Federal authorities to move west after theTreaty of Dancing Rabbit Creek was signed on September 27, 1830 on the banks of a creek in the southwest part of what later became NoxubeeCounty. A sign pointing south from State Highway #14 marks the site.This treaty ceded all lands from the Alabama border to the MississippiRiver from the Choctaw Indians for settlement by United States citizens moving west. The Indians were relocated in a new territory called "Oklahoma," an Indian term, meaning "land of the Red Man." Of course, Noxubee County is close to our family's heart, as my wife,Suzanne Margaret Boggess Sharpe, spend most of her growing up years in that County. We visit her father's farm every Thanksgiving. It is a farm that has been in his family since 1842.

It is of interest to know that the Choctaws are still there, concentrated mainly around the Oklahoma towns of Canadian and Choctaw in the eastern county of McIntosh, about 80 miles south of Tulsa.

"Paul Collins Abney was sent to board with the Heflin family and attend the summer school. It was here in the summer of 1845 that hemet the black-eyed, black haired, rosy cheeked, vivacious maiden, Margaret Fullerton, and a love match was on at once." Autobiography by James A. Abney, M.D., June 1928 booklet.

By December of 1845, Paul could restrain himself no longer and rode off on the beautiful Kentucky-bred horse his father had given him, he fetched his bride to be from the Heflin's and they were married at a time when Paul's father was out of town on a preaching

mission.Needless to say Joseph was burdened in his mind when the two newly married children showed up at his place. Being in the midst of financial difficulties and being the father of a large family, he was despairing. However, Dr. Abney's description about Margaret melts your heart: "Finally Margaret went to him (her new father-in-law) ,put her arms around his neck, kissed him sweetly and looking up into his troubled face, begged him to cease worrying about them, that they were young and healthy and knew how to work and she had no fear about them finding a way to take care of themselves and make their way through life. And right here cropped out a faith, trust, courage and indomitable will, that made Margaret a marked woman all through life.She stood 'head and shoulders' above the average. They came to her freely for advice and help and always received it unstintingly. She made a favorable impression on Joseph Duncan Abney."

Paul and Margaret married as sixteen-year-old runaways in Neshoba County in Northeast Mississippi. Paul's father, Joseph Duncan Abney, was a prominent minister of the Missionary Baptist Church. He was an itinerant preacher. Along the way, he became financially secure, owning a plantation, other outside lands, and almost 20 slaves. However, by the time Paul and Margaret married, which occurred when Joseph was on an out of town preaching trip, Joseph had, through a series of reverses, lost all of his financial security, except his remaining homestead. After the "child couple" confronted Joseph with their newly married status, Joseph managed to accept it and permitted them to lodge in one of the cabins of his former slaves.

In 1849, this young couple moved to Saint Helena Parish, Louisiana, which is the parish (county) immediately adjacent on the north east side of the parish where Baton Rouge is the State Capital. Next, they moved to Angelina County in East Texas in 1853, which was on the outer fringe of civilization. Texas had been a state for only eight years after nine brief years as an independent republic.

Paul and Margaret settled in Homer in 1853, which shortly was to become the Angelina County Seat. Homer is located southeast of Lufkin, about five miles out US Highway 69. Their child, William Albert Abney, Sr. was born May 21, 1853, but we do not know whether he was born in Texas or in Louisiana from where the family moved in 1853. Though the recordings of births in Angelina County is not thorough for those early years, I can confirm their their County Birth Records do not contain his name. This does not mean he was not born in Texas. It just means we cannot confirm the birth place.

Paul and his family were close in to the beginnings of AngelinaCounty. Shortly after Texas joined the United States, Angelina County was formed out of by an act of the Texas Legislature on April 22, 1846. The county held its first election February 3, 1847 to determine the county seat. The winner was Moses Bluff, located on the West bank of the Angelina River, by a vote of26-2 against the town of Dunagan. A dispute arose and another election was held. The winner again was Moses Bluff by a vote of 37-2and the county seat was renames Marion. Discrepancies forced another election June 16, 1854. Jonesville won over Marion by a vote of 116-39. Further unsatisfactory conditions caused the Texas Legislature to call for another county seat election in early November1856. That vote was declared illegal and a second vote was taken in December. Jonesville received the most votes in the count. However, the demand for a recount resulted in Homer being the county seat. After several more elections and controversies, Lufkin was finally selected county seat in 1892. [Source: "History of Angelina County,"Wallace Davison, Project Director, Lufkin Genealogical & HistoricalSociety, Lufkin, Texas 1992]

Yellow fever took the lives of some 5,000 people in New Orleans from1853 to 1855. Vicksburg, Mississippi lost 16% of its population to the fever in 1853. Congress authorized a survey to determine the best route to establish a transcontinental railroad. Mr. Franklin Pierce was inaugurated President of the United States, the 14th President.... a Democrat ... who was not re-nominated by his party in 1856. The Gadsden Purchase was negotiated with Mexico for the U.S. to acquire some 30,000 square miles of land, mostly representing New Mexico and Arizona today ... at a price of \$15 million but re-negotiated later to \$10 million. Louisiana State University was chartered in Alexandria, as the Louisiana State Seminary of Learning and Military Academy. And Gail Borden applied for a patent for making evaporated milk in a vacuum.

Paul and Margaret settled in Homer, which then was the Angelina CountySeat. Homer is located southeast of Lufkin about five miles out federal highway #69. Though many of the early years provided deep periods of poverty, especially during the Civil War, Paul later acquired large land holdings, and his occupations were being a farmer and a surveyor. A subsequent home in Lufkin was located where theTexas Foundries later stood.

Paul and Mattie joined the church in 1863 in the context of an old time revival held at the Methodist Church campgrounds in AngelinaCounty. The Rev. John Cox brought them to this conversion experience. Mattie had made a Christian commitment at the Baptist Church in 1846, but this was a first time profession for Paul, even though he was a son of an evangelist.

Though many of the early years provided deep periods of poverty, especially during the War Between the States, Paul later acquired large land holdings, and his occupations were being a farmer and a surveyor. A subsequent home in Lufkin was located where the Texas Foundries later stood.

Notes for Margaret Elvira "Maggie" Fullerton:

Margare Elvira Fullerton was born Octobe 18, 1829, the year thatWilliam Booth (4/10/1829 - 8/20/1912) was born, the English ministerand founder of the Salvation Army. She was born the month beforeLondon's reorganized police force, which became known as ScotlandYard, went on duty on September 29, 1829. The year of her birth,1829, William Austin Burt of Mount Vernon, Michigan, received a patentfor his typographer, a forerunner of the typewriter.

Sources: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/William_Booth http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Scotland_Yard http://www.michmarkers.com/startup.asp?startpage=S0570.htm

Her birthplace was just a little west of Tuscaloosa and on the westernborder of Alabama, directly across from what later would becomeNoxubee County, Mississippi, the home county of Suzanne's family, mywife. It was seven miles from Pickensville on the Tom Bigbee River. She became an orphan, and went to be raised by her Uncle DanielHefflin, a well-to-do planter who owned a number of slaves in NeshobaCounty, Mississippi, the next county over on the southwest fromNoxubee. Neshoba County is situated northeast from the Jackson areaand Philadelphia is the County Seat. A log school house existed inthat community, and Paul's parents sent him from Jackson to live withthe Hefflin family while attending summer school there. It was inthat context that Paul and Margaret met.

Around 1830, Mississippi was very undeveloped. The native ChoctawIndians were forced by Federal authorities to move west after theTreaty of Dancing Rabbit Creek was signed on September 27, 1830 on thebanks of a creek in the southwest part of what later became NoxubeeCounty. A sign pointing south from Mississippi State Highway #14marks the site. This treaty ceded all lands from the Alabama border tothe Mississippi River from the Choctaw Indians for settlement byUnited States citizens moving west. The Indians were relocated in anew territory called "Oklahoma," an Indian term, meaning "land of theRed Man." Coincidentally, that is the County were most of thegrowing up years of my wife, Suzanne Margaret Boggess Sharpe, werespent.

In her married life and family raising years, she and Paul livedJackson, Mississippi; Baton Rouge, Louisana, then finally to AngelinaCounty, Texas. At first, they resided in Homer, which was destined later to become the county seat. However, subsequently they moved toLufkin, the town that became the county seat next. One wonderswhether their residential

presence gives unusual prospect for theplace to become a county seat!

Margaret desired her children to have exposure to the teachings of Christ, and so she organized a Sunday School meeting for her twelvechildren and others in the neighborhood to attend regularly. Thateffort eventually developed to become the First Methodist Church of Lufkin in 1882.

- 62. **Felix Benedict Dixon** (son of John Dixon and Sarah Benedict) was born in 1818 in Ohio. He died in Apr 1896 in San Augustine, San Augustine County, Texas. He married **Lovinia Shanks** (daughter of Joseph L. Shanks) on Jan 20, 1846 in San Augustine County, Republic of Texas.
- 63. Lovinia Shanks (daughter of Joseph L. Shanks) was born in 1828 in Tennessee. She died on Apr 21, 1873 in San Augustine, San Augustine County, Texas.

Notes for Felix Benedict Dixon:

When Felix Benedict Dixon was born in 1818 in Ohio, his father, John, was 18 and his mother, Sarah, was 18. He had one daughter with Lovina Shanks in 1853. He died in April 1896 in San Augustine, Texas, having lived a long life of 78 years.

Dixon is a Northern English name, described as "patronymic from the personal name, Dick. Source: Patrick Hanks, Editor, Dictionary of American Family Names,Oxford University Press, New York, New York, 2003, Card #929.40973D554 2003 V.1, Dallas Public Library, Genealogical Section, page 470.

Both of Felix's parents were estimated as being born in West Virginia in 1800 and that both died in 1818, about the birth time of Felix. There is no evidence yet discovered as to what led to such early deaths, nor do we know of the paths Felix followed prior to his entrance into Texas circa 1840.

Felix Benedict Dixon was born in Ohio in 1818, as indicated in the San Augustine County, Texas US Census of 1850. Residents were asked for the state where born. That same Census entry indicated that his unnamed parents were born in West Virginia. He could have been the Felix Dixon who appeared in 1840 in the US Census in Kentucky, indicated as a single man in a household. That possibly could be compatible with the fact that his Tennessee born wife, Lovinia Shanks, was not born until 1828 and would have been only 12 in 1840. However, we have no way just yet of knowing whether the Kentucky man was our Felix. It's interesting to note that the same year as Felix's birth, Mary Ann Todd Lincoln, destined to be Abraham Lincoln's First Lady in the White House, was born in nearby Lexington, Kentucky on December 13, 1818. If Felix is the one seen in the Kentucky Census of 1840, Mary and Felix may have crossed paths. Fun to imagine, isn't it?

Felix Benedict Dixon is my great, great grandfather, thus making me a fifth generation Texan. The world of 1818 for Ohio when it was a fifteen year old state had a half million population, having grown in those 15 years from about 50,000. It was the year the United States and Canada agreed upon the 49th parallel as their border. It was just four years before Ulysses Grant was born in Ohio, the man destined to lead the United States military in the War Between the States, and later to be come President. We do not know when Felix departed Ohio, but it was fast becoming crowded, apparently.

His initial appearance in Texas was San Augustine, San Augustine County. The Minutes of the Session of the Bethel (Old School) Presbyterian Church, organized in June 1838, reflects at the end of 1840 a list of 39 members who had been removed from the church roll or who had voluntarily left the church. One of them was F. B. Dixon. It seems unusual that he could be counted in the 1840 Census in Kentucky, migrated to Texas, join the church, then be removed or leave its membership by the end of the year. So, we still are uncertain about when he arrived in Texas and whether he was the man counted in the1840 Kentucky Census or whether he is the 1840 Dixon listed by the church.

This part of East Texas and the Western end of the United States at that time (Louisiana) was rip roaring in the 1840's. The "Red Lander" San Augustine newspaper in its issue of May 19, 1842, page 2, reports on the fatal duel fought the day before at the Louisiana Race Course between Mr. R. C. Martin of Assumption Parish and Judge A. W. Pichot, Esq. The duel was fired at ten paces and the Judge ended up with a bad judgement! It turns out that Mr. Martin was the really big shot! I have certified evidence in my records is that Felix B. Dixon took an oath as an immigrant to the Republic of Texas in San Augustine County in May, 1841. He would have been age 23 at the time. This fact is gathered from the record of the 320 acre land grant for which he received a certificate of title on July 1,1844.

His arrival date in Texas is unknown, but claiming the land grant involved having taken an oath of emigration to become a citizen of the Republic of Texas, followed by continuous residence on the acres for three years. After that three years of demonstrated stability as a citizen, Texas General Land Office would issue the certification that finalized the title. The fact that he claimed 320 acres indicates his marital status was single, as married claimants would receive 640 acres.

This was obviously a pro-Sam Houston area of the new nation as evidenced by its 1844 election. The "Red Lander" (a newspaper in San Augustine, San Augustine County, Texas) on September 8, 1844, page 3, reported the county's vote results for President of Texas as 442 for Sam Houston and 48 for D. G. Eurpet (who ever heard of him by now?).

The interesting thing about these land grants was that the claimant was responsible to find the unoccupied land, hire a surveyor to plot a drawing legally acceptable to the Texas General Land Office, then submit it to the TGLO for processing. Felix settled and stayed in that locale till his 1896 death in San Augustine County ("The FirstSettlers of San Augustine County, Texas," by Gifford White, page. 50).

Felix Dixon's appearance in San Augustine County, Texas is further evidenced by his purchase of land in 1842, which is certified in my records by the San Augustine County Clerk's office. Therefore, he evidently came to Texas with certainty before he purchased this 25 acres in San Augustine County in December of 1842. Felix was elected County Surveyor for the County of San Augustine, Republic of Texas in 1844, thus making him the only elected official in the Republic of Texas in my lineage. This signals the initial evidence we see of his propensity to be a man politic.

Earlier in that year, there is certified record that Felix purchased 1,000 acres for \$300 from Joseph French, situated in San Augustine County, Republic of Texas, on the west side of the Brazos River. So, Felix is a man of some means, and not just a recent emigrant who was broke when he came to seek his fame and fortune.

Felix appeared on a list of practicing attorneys in San Augustine County, Texas in 1844 for the 5th District Court of the Republic ofTexas. It would be easy to conjecture legal training may have been acquired prior to his 1841 immigration oath to Texas, and that such education may have been acquired at the University of Kentucky, if he is the man cited above in the 1840 Kentucky U.S. Census. However, it is my understanding that lawyers practicing in those times often were educated by being an apprentice to an existing attorney, rather than by formal education. It was not yet required to have a professional certification or bar membership to practice.

His profession as an attorney is further evidenced by the advertisement for his legal and counsellor services that is found on page 3 of the March 12, 1846 issue of the "Red Lander" San Augustine newspaper. We see his marriage to Lovinia Shanks in San Augustine County evidenced by a certified copy I have of a marriage license issued on January 7, 1846. The marriage ceremony was conducted by the County Judge on January 20 of that month.

Felix appeared on the San Augustine County property tax roll in 1846. We do not know whether Felix and Lovinia came together to San Augustine at the same time, or whether his Tennessee born bride came there with others and they met in San Augustine. We see her named spelled two ways: Like we cite her in these records, and we have seen her listed as "Lovina." The couple married when he was age 28 and she was 18. This is the year that Herman Melville published his first novel, "Typee." It's also the year that architect James Renwick designed the Smithsonian Institute building in Gothic Revival style.

[Source: Timetables of American History]

Another evidence of Felix's presence in the Republic of Texas is that 1846 Poll Lists were compiled at the beginning of Statehood of all who were citizens of the Republic, in order that they would be taxed in the new State's revenues. Two lists were compiled for each county. One list went to the Texas State Treasurer and the other to the County Sheriff, who was the tax collector. This list is the nearest thing to a census that exists for those who entered the Union from theRepublic.

Source: "Republic of Texas Poll Lists For 1846," Compiled by MarionDay Mullins, Genealogical Publishing Company, Baltimore, Maryland, 1974, pages 44 and the Forward.

Felix's entry in the US Census of San Augustine, San Augustine County, Texas of 1850 shows him to be an Ohio born man, age 32, with a wife named Lovina (possible misspelling by the Census taker), born in Tennessee, and with two daughters born in 1847 and 1849 in Texas. A third daughter was born in 1852, Elizabeth, and a fourth daughter was born in 1853, Martha Jane Dixon. Martha Jane married into the Abney family and became my great grandmother. Felix and Lovina bore six children in all, every one a daughter. I have documentation that two of the births were in San Augustine, San Augustine County, Texas. However, since there is no evidence the family ever lived elsewhere, it is a likely assumption that all the children were born there. Another fact about the 1850 Census for this family unit was that a Tennessee born 16 year female named Helen Shanks resided with them. Possibly she served a nanny role for the family.

Though we have no other evidence, it is logical that this is a younger sister of Tennessee born Lovinia Shanks Dixon, the wife in this household, who was age 22 in 1850. I have a court record of a certification about a legal matter that is signed and certified by Chief Justice Felix B. Dixon on October 14,1846. Apparently he had achieved elected office by that time. What is interesting is that the title of Chief Justice was changed after statehood took over, and that head of county government was then called County Judge, as it is today. I can only suppose that the practice of using the Republic of Texas title was still in effect, even though the February 19, 1846 date had passed for official recognition of Statehood by the Congress of the United States.

Chief Justice Alfred Polk was elected to that office in 1845, a few short months before Texas statehood. Felix and Lovinia were among the earliest marriages that were conducted by Judge Polk. Harry Noble's book reports the marriage as January 20, 1846. (Harry P. Noble, Jr., "Texas Trailblazers: San Augustine Pioneers," Best of East Texas Publishers, 515 South First Street, Box 1647, Lufkin, Texas 75901). The marriage license has been identified and certified for me. It is recorded on page 61 of the register of marriages in the San Augustine County Clerk's office and dated January 7, 1846.

Judge Polk served some 15 years in that position. We see in Mr. Harry Noble's book on Texas Trailblazers (Page. 171) that at some point (the year is unidentified), Felix Dixon opposed him for election as County Judge. Apparently, it was an unsuccessful effort for Felix, as we read that Judge Polk was ultimately replaced by Judge Ransom Sowell in August of 1860 (Page 170 - Noble's book). However, that does not explain why I located a document signed by Felix in 1846 with the title of Chief Justice. Perhaps Felix won a term and Judge Polk was successful in being reelected again the following term.

I was privileged to meet Harry Noble when I visited the San Augustine County Historical

Foundation center on March 24, 2004. It was located on the north side of the town square, across from the courthouse. I understand it is now housed in the courthouse. A grant from a foundation had enabled them to commit to retrievable computer records the entire inventory of public records from their county courthouse, as well as from local institutions that maintain orderly records, such as churches and business enterprises. They claim to be the first Texas County to have all of their records so accessible.

Harry autographed one of his books for me, as there were several there he had written about the local history. The Director of the San Augustine County Historical Foundation when I visited was Mr. Neal Murphy. He and his staff, particularly Missy, were very helpful to me in gathering much public record data aboutFelix and his family. Its mission is that of Records Preservation. Mr. Murphy wrote a letter for me that documents some of the material.

He also directed me to the drug store a block away to try their Grapefruit Highball, which he said would be free to a first time out-of-town drinker. I tried that, and it worked! It is a delightful non-alcoholic grapefruit drink served in a glass cowboy boot.

"In the fall of the 1862 Captain Felix B. Dixon raised a company in San Augustine County which was assigned to the 25th Texas Infantry under Colonel Waterhouse in Walker's Division." (G. L Crocket's book, page 337) Another source is a General Index the Federal Government has online at: www.itd.nps.gov/cwss/Personz_Detail.cfm It indicates that F. B. Dixon entered and departed the Confederate military with the rank of Captain. He is indicated as serving in the 19th Texas Infantry Regiment. It was organized about May 13, 1862. It also has Colonel Richard Waterhouse, Jr. serving as that Regiment's first Commander.

Strangely, Felix is not listed on the 1867 Registered Voters List for San Augustine County. Later his name did appear often on qualified juror lists for San Augustine County over the years, too numerous to be worth footnoting. Evidently he did become a registered voter, particularly since we have read that he competed against Judge Polk for election at least once for the County Judge position. We see he did win that office later. I was interested, not only that Felix was a Presbyterian, as have I been for much of my life, but that his Bethel Old School Presbyterian Church was the very first mainline Presbyterian Church established in Texas. That establishment was June 2, 1838.

In the book about the history of that church, Felix is cited as being a church member who served in the Confederate Army. So, he must have joined the church sometime before to 1862, the date cited by the pastor writing that history. We still have the situation where an F. B. Dixon was removed from the membership roll in late 1840. Also noted in that book is the citation that Judge Polk was a member of that church.

Citing it as the first mainline Presbyterian Church is a qualifying statement. Actually, just about a year earlier, at nearby Shiloh, a Cumberland Presbyterian Church was organized, and over the years has finally become a member of today's Presbyterian Church USA denomination. However, back in its organizing days, the Cumberland Presbyterian Church was an off-shoot from mainline Presbyterianism, splitting over the issue of whether the ordained clergy should be required to have a seminary education. That was a real issue in the early 1800's, as seminary education often meant a trip back to Europe, although Princeton University, established by the Presbyterians in1746, was available. So, today there are two Presbyterian Churches that claim being the first Texas Presbyterian Church.

The Minutes of the Session of the Bethel Presbyterian Church include a confirmed listing of current church members in June, 1880. F. B.Dixon was listed. It is strange that the several times I observed that he appeared in records of that church, none of them give any references to other Dixon family members. That church later changed name to that of the First PresbyterianChurch, then later still, changed it to the Memorial Presbyterian Church, the name it uses today (2004).

It was the Rev. Mr. Hugh Wilson who was authorized by the Presbyterian Synod of Mississippi to establish a foreign outreach in the nation of Texas, which was the San Augustine church. Mr. Wilson is an ancestor of Hilda Grace Cunningham (Tinker) Rautenberg. Tinker's father, the Rev. T. M. Cunnigham, chronicled the life and ministry of the Rev. Wilson (who ultimately became Dr. Wilson) in his book, "Hugh Wilson: A Pioneer Saint." (WilkinsonPrinting Company, Dallas, Texas, 1938). Tinker is a friend of mine andwas an Elder at Highland Park Presbyterian Church of Dallas, where I serve on staff as Executive Administrator to the Senior Pastor for 22 years. Tinker is a musician and, in her younger years, she sang with Vaughn Monroe's Big Band Orchestra known for those harmonious songs of the 1940's The girls' singing group was known as the Moonmaids. Tinker retired to Pineola, North Carolina. Later, she moved to Selah, Washington

Another characteristic of this first Presbyterian Church in Texas interests me. In Mr. Cunningham's book about Dr. Wilson, as well as in the book at the San Augustine Public Library about that church's history, there is indication that the original charter members in 1838 were 20 people, two families of which were Sharp surnames. Though I realize the names cited are not in my direct lineage, my mind wonders to conjecture if further research someday would reveal a lateral relationship. One of those Sharps was listed as an Elder. In addition, a surprising fact was that the Sharp family owned two Negro slaves who also were listed as charter members in full standing of that church! That, in my mind, was really a forward thinking group of people for that day, having members from both races.

There is a Tabular Statement of attendance of children in 1861 (page 5) wherein Felix B. Dixon is listed as the parent with these children and attendances for that school year: Mary, 96 days; Sarah, 91 days; Bettie, 97 days; and Martha, 100 days. It also is interesting to see that the family listed next to Felix's family is one headed by a Francis (Frank) Dixon. He probably is not closely related, as it indicates his birthplace is Germany. However, he could have been the F. B. Dixon cited in the 1840 list of the church about removed members.

San Augustine was a rip roaring town in the 1800's, on up into the early 1900's. I've read accounts of the gun slinger wars and the rough sheriffs that gunned down bad men, and sheriffs that were killed. There were lots of saloons and places of gambling interests that flourished. Even though there definitely was a bad element that infected the community, it was written that the majority of the people were law-abiding and decent citizens.

Certainly the Dixon family was a part of this majority. Mr. William R. Broocks, an Elder Emeritus in the church on whose staff I was employed for 22 years, Highland Park Presbyterian Church in Dallas, Texas, lent me a book in 2004 about San Augustine entitled, "Gunsmoke in the Redlands." It's all about the wild and lawless nature of San Augustine in the late 1880's and early 1900's. Included are vivid descriptions of gun fights in the saloons, on the streets and in ambush. There was an ongoing battle between the bad guys (gamblers, saloon owners and crooks) and the good citizens of the town. Bill's family came from there. I'm happy to say that his folks were from the good guys' side of town, as was my great, great grandfather Dixon. However, Bill's grandfather was one of three brothers who were making it hard on the bad guys.

The book has the account about they young 24 year old brother of the recently gunned down crooked sheriff having a grudge against Bill's grandfather, Ben Broocks. Well, this young gun slinger was said to walk up behind Ben as Ben was entering the doorway of a saloon. Thirty-three year old Ben was gunned down by five shots fired at his back, four of which hit their mark! Ben was armed, but never had a chance to draw his iron! Ben was killed on Saturday,June 2, 1900, out in the public, for his role of standing up for what was right in the town. Ben left behind 28 year old Laura, his wife, four year old Ara, his daughter, and two year old Ben, Jr. Bill tells me that the family hearsay is that Ben was walking into the doorway of a barber shop, not a bar! Well, who knows? This must be why the Broocks family are such high caliber folks!

This is just another story of wild Texas living and martyred citizens who were trying to make Texas a livable place to be in those early days. Interestingly, a couple of years after Bill let

me have a short use of the book, "Gunsmoke in the Redlands," I ran across its title in an inventory catalog of Texas lore antiques for sale. The Wright Collection of Waco, Texas said that the book was becoming pretty rare, and they had it for sale, priced at \$100!

Lufkin resident Mrs. W. Arch (Mary) Henderson gave me a Bible in 1988 belonging to one of Felix's daughters, Sarah Dixon. It was inscribed as being from "father." Mrs. Henderson said she recalled him only as "Judge Dixon from San Augustine." Sarah was her step grandmother, according to Mrs. Henderson's conversation with me at Lufkin in her home. Sarah married once. She was the second wife of Lufkin merchant Calvin Mantooth. I do not have much information about Felix's second wife, Frances L. Davis. That second marriage also gave issue as early as 1874. They had three daughters and a son. So Felix fathered ten children between the two marriages, from 1847 to 1880, a span of 33 years. This was along time to be making babies!

His son, Frank, died at the age of 19. We have no record of Frank giving issue to any children, nor of his ever having a marriage. Therefore, we know of no male Dixon descendants following Felix. Felix's will simply left all of his estate to his wife, Frances, without naming other family members.

Felix died in April 1896, just three months prior to the passing of American literary icon, Harriet Beecher Stowe, the author of "UncleTom's Cabin." Felix had been a captain in the army that rebelled against a nation that had been stirred up, in part, by her writings illustrating the status of slavery in America. It was the year that the U.S. Supreme Court ruled in Plessy vs Ferguson that "separate but equal" facilities for whites and blacks was constitutional, a legal position that prevailed for 58 years before being reversed in 1954 in Brown vs the Kansas City Board of Education.

It was the year that John Phillips Sousa composed "The Stars and Stripes Forever." William McKinley was elected President, rural free mail service in America was established, and former baseball player Billy Sunday began his career as an evangelist.

[Source: Timetables of American History, pages258-261]

The month Felix died, the Vitascope system for projecting movies onto a screen was demonstrated in New York City.

Source:http://www.nytimes.com/learning/general/onthisday/20050423.html?th&emc=th

The Dixon Family plots in the San Augustine City Cemetery form the very first fenced family section immediately on the left as one enters the main gate of the cemetery. I can't help but think that such a prime location may reflect something of the prominence of the Dixon family in those days. Felix Benedict Dixon represents the beginning of Texas roots for me and my family. His enterprise, his church participation, his political propensity and his apparent significance in his community are all elements for which I am pleased and thankful to share in such a heritage.

It was my proving relationship to Felix as a citizen of the Republic of Texas that qualified me to become a member of the genealogical organization, the Sons of the Republic of Texas, member #07961, awarded October 27, 2005. My local chapter of membership was the Ephraim M. Daggett Chapter #36 in Fort Worth, Tarrant County, Texas. Membership required proof of direct lineal descent from a Republic of Texas citizen.

Notes for Lovinia Shanks:

Lovinia (or Lovina as it sometimes was spelled) seems to have had her 1828 birth reported in the 1850 Census of San Augustine County, Texas as being in Tennessee.

Though she was married to Felix Benedict Dixon in San Augustine County, we do not know whether they met in San Augustine County or whether the two of them knew each other

elsewhere and came to San Augustine County together. My assumption is that they most likely met there in Texas.

Generation 7

- 64. **Samuel Jumper** (son of John Jumper) was born in 1774. He died on Feb 16, 1839 in Coosa County, Alabama. He married **Elizabeth Crim**.
- 65. Elizabeth Crim She died after 1832.

Notes for Samuel Jumper:

Samuel moved from South Carolina to Autauga County, Alabama after selling off his extensive land grants and holdings that totaled about 2,500 acres. Among these parcels was one known as old "Red Store" tract at Sandy Run in the Lexington District, South Carolina, a parcel containing a cemetery with many Jumper and allied ancestors were buried.

Samuel made a will in 1834, revealing the name of his wife as Elizabeth. Samuel mentions his mother in the will as still living, and the names of his children. One of his sons, John G. Jumper, was named as the executor of the will.

The descendants of Samuel Jumper, Jr., migrated to northeast Mississippi in 1845. They settled in Itawamba and old Tishomingo Counties on the former hunting grounds of the Chickasaw Indians, who were removed by 1837. Tishomingo County was divided April 15, 1870 to form Alcom, Prentiss and Tishomingo Counties. The early Jumper pioneers who migrated to Tishomingo County, settled in an area in present-day Prentiss County, which became known as Jumpertown community. Incorporated on December 28, 1975, today Jumpertown is a thriving little town, situated about four miles west of Booneville, and about fifteen miles east of Ripley on Mississippi Highway 4. All of this information was provided by Col. Sherman Jumper, a well known genealogist from Eads, Tennessee for the Jumper families.

Notes for Elizabeth Crim:

In 1832, Henry Carver, writing to his former neighbor, Alexander Stivender in South Carolina, says, "... David Jumper and family consisting of three sons and two daughters were well, and old grandmother Crim is just living and blind.

Samuel Jumper and George Spigner and John James (Myers) are as well as I know of." This is our basis of designating Elizabeth's maiden name as Crim.

- 80. Lancaster Nason (son of John Nason and Catherine Atkins) was born on Mar 12, 1787 in Youghal, East County Cork, Ireland in Castle Lyons. He died on Sep 15, 1856 in Oktibbeha County, Mississippi. He married Mary Ann Griffith (daughter of Thomas Griffith and Margaret Sarah) about 1820 in London, England.
- 81. **Mary Ann Griffith** (daughter of Thomas Griffith and Margaret Sarah) was born on May 02, 1799 in London, England. She died on Feb 09, 1863 in Choctaw County, Mississippi.

Notes for Lancaster Nason:

Lancaster Nason came from Ireland. His wife, Mary Ann Griffith, wasthe daughter of Captain Griffith, the Englishman who it is saidguarded Napoleon until he died in exile and he carried his body backfor burial.

Mary Ann was going to marry a peasant boy and her father whipped herthree times, tearing

three dresses off her, and made her marryLancaster Nason, because he was a wealthy nobleman. In coming toAmerica, she threw all his notes into the sea. Therefore, theyarrived in America as undocumented paupers. Her hair was bright redwhen she left Ireland and in crossing the ocean, her hair turnedblack. It remained so until Lancaster died as age 62 years. Thereport that he died at age 62 and the dates we have seen for his birthand death dates present a discrepancy about that.

Notes for Mary Ann Griffith:

Mary Ann was born the year that American orator Patrick Henry died inCharlotte County, Virginia on June 6, 1799.

Source:http://www.answers.com/topic/patrick-henry

- 82. William O'Conner He married Nancy Jane.
- 83. Nancy Jane
- 92. Samuel Lewis was born in 1750 in North Carolina. He died in 1816 in North Carolina.
- 96. **George P. Sharp** (son of Johann Peter "Peter" Scherp and Eva Schneider) was born about 1747 in Germantown, Columbia County, New York. He died on Apr 24, 1792. He married **Margaret Rebecca Teater** (daughter of Henrich Teater and Beletje Neher) on Apr 23, 1771.
- 97. **Margaret Rebecca Teater** (daughter of Henrich Teater and Beletje Neher) was born on Oct 27, 1750 in Rinebeck, Duchess County, New York. She died on Feb 29, 1844.

Notes for George P. Sharp:

George is my third great grandfather. He was born the year that John Paul Jones was born, who later became famous as a naval officer in the American Revolution. That year, English scholar Dr. Samuel Johnson began his eight year marathon creation of the "Dictionary of the English Language," which sealed his place in American history as a truly significant contributor, even though he did not live here.

Source: "The Timetables of History" 3rd Revised Edition, Bernard Grun, Simon & Schuster, New York 1991, page 344.

George Sharp served in the Revolutionary War. He is cited in the "Calleudes of Revolutionary Manuscripts" in the office of the Secretary of State at Albany, New York (according to some private notes written in 1897 by an unnamed writer).

George served as a 2nd Lieutenant in Captain Herman Hoffman's Company, Colonel John Van Ness' Regiment of Minute Men. He was also 2nd Lieutenant in Captain Andrea Herman's Company, Colonel Morris Graham's Regiment of Foot Service of the U.S. under Command of Brigadier General Clinton. In the National Archives in Washington DC, I was able to locate a record (M-804, Roll #2158, Pension Applications for the American Revolutionary War) citing that a Pension was drawn by his widow. Even though George was only age 45 at his death, Rebecca, his widow, lived to an age of 93. This death date was estimated by the Pension record stating when the pension payments ceased.

George's American Revolutionary service is documented in files at both the Daughters of the American Revolution offices and the Sons of the American Revolution offices. He is the ancestor relationship by which I was certified to become a member of the Texas Society of the Sons of the American Revolution, Dallas (Texas) Chapter, October 26, 1988. My sponsor was Mr. Peter W. Orlebeke, President of that Chapter that year. Pete also is Suzanne's (my wife) seventh cousin, once removed, through their Wellborn ancestry. George Sharp's post war experience was as a hardware merchant in the firm of Sharp & Sahler in the Hudson River village of Germantown, New York.

In 1792, the year that George died, Kentucky became a state. The world's first chemical society was formed in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania. George P. Sharp died the same month of George Washington's casting of the first presidential veto on April 5, 1792, rejecting a congressional measure for apportioning representatives among the states.

Sources:

http://www.infoplease.com/askeds/first-veto.html

"The Timetables of History," 3rd Revised Edition, Bernard Grun, Simon& Schuster, New York 1991, pages 368-369.

In 1989, Suzanne and I made a long automobile trip from Texas through the northeast United States, which included touring around this part of New York State. In Germantown, just on the north side of it, we found a street named Sharp's Landing Road. It ran west of the main street of town, Highway 9G, down toward the nearby Hudson River. We imagine that this is a location where some of George's enterprise endeavors took place. We understand he was a merchant and it could well have been that he operated a river ferry service in that vicinity, which could have been the reason for the road's name.

One thing impressed us as we visited Germantown and the Hudson River. It is a very beautiful countryside, and one in which most anyone would consider it a pleasure to live.

Notes for Margaret Rebecca Teater:

Even though George P. Sharpe was only age 45 at his death, Rebecca, his widow, lived to an age of 93.

This death date is interpreted by George's Pension record stating the date when the payments ceased. I located that record at the National Archives in Washington, D.C.

- Bradford Kellogg (son of Samuel Kellogg and Mary Steele) was born on Mar 24, 1759 in Enfield, Hartford County, Connecticut. He died in 1832 in Ohio. He married Mary Polly "Polly" Thompson in 1786.
- 101. **Mary Polly "Polly" Thompson** was born on Nov 10, 1767 in Goshen, Litchfield County, Connecticut. She died in Goshen, Litchfield County, Connecticut.

Notes for Bradford Kellogg:

Bradford Kellogg served as a Private in the American Revolutionary War in a Connecticut company. Litchfield County, from the town of Goshen.

Source:"Honor Roll of American Revolutionary Soldiers of LitchfieldCounty" (Connecticut), by the Mary Floyd Tallmadge Chapter of theDaughters of the American Revolution, Litchfield, Connecticut, 1912.

Notes for Mary Polly "Polly" Thompson:

Mary, or Polly as she was known, was born the same year as was AndrewJackson, the seventh president of the United States, born in Waxhaw,South Caronina on March 15, 1767.

Source:http://www.whitehouse.gov/history/presidents/aj7.html

- 102. **David Bishop** (son of Samuel Bishop and Lois Gaylord) was born on Feb 11, 1783 in Goshen, Litchfield County, Connecticut. He married **Sarah Kennedy** on Oct 10, 1848 in Portage County, Ohio.
- 103. **Sarah Kennedy** was born on Mar 18, 1784 in Blandford, Hampden County, Massachusetts. She died on Oct 10, 1848 in Portage County, Ohio.
- 104. **Philip J. "Phil" Simons** (son of Philip Simons and Mary) was born in 1802 in Logan County, Kentucky. He married **Delia King** (daughter of Stephen King and Precilla) on Jun 14, 1824 in Logan County, Kentucky.
- 105. **Delia King** (daughter of Stephen King and Precilla) was born in 1803 in Virginia. She died between 1848-1850.

Notes for Philip J. "Phil" Simons:

Philip J. Simons, my third great grandfather, was born in 1802 the year Congress authorized the establishment of the U.S. Military Academy at West Point, New York on March 16, 1802. It opened on July4th.

Source:http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/United_States_Military_Academy

The 1830 Census shows this family living in Hopkins County, Kentucky, as it did later in the 1850 Census. The 1830 Census, which only enumerated people living in the household -- no names, except the head of household, indicates that children (or at least other people) lived in the household as follows: Males, less than age 5, which may have been Alfred, one male age 5 to less than 10 and one male age 10 to less than 15. There was a female under five and a female age 20 to less than 30.

The older female, quite likely, was Philip's wife, Delia King. His wife, the two older males and the younger female do not appear in this household's list of family members in the 1850 Census. The reader should recall that the 1850 Census was the first Census that listed all the names of household members present, even non-relatives. Those children missing from the 1850 Census probably had left home by then. Delia King Simons perhaps died between 1848, the latest birth of a child we see, and the 1850 Census.

In the 1850 Slave Schedules of Kentucky, Philip J. Simons is cited as owning a black slave male, age about 50, and a black slave female, age about 40.

The 1860 Slave Schedules of Kentucky had P. J. Simons cited as owning the following black slaves: a female, age 50, a male age 21, females ages 19, 5 and 2.

The Census of 1860 in Madisonville, Hopkins County, Kentucky does show a wife with the name of Sarah. She is the second wife we see for Philip. I am assuming he was widowed from his first wife, as we have no information about the ending of that first marriage. Sarah may have been widowed as well (rather than divorced), as the 1860 Census indicates the household headed by Philip, with Sarah as the wife, contained two household members with last names of Krouse, ages 15 and 17. Sarah actually had three husbands over her life, with Philip J. Simons being the third and last husband.

A Simons researcher and descendant, Ms. April Boobish, of Oakville Saint Louis County, Missouri, communicated with me in 2007 through an Ancestry.com family group site, indicating she had a copy of a 1856 land title conveying some land by Philip J. Simons and his wife, Sarah W. Simons to their daughter, Mary Inez Simons Smith (she having married Mr. Washington B. Smith). Mary apparently was married prior to 1850, as she was not listed with Philip & Sarah Simons in the 1850 US Census in Kentucky. Of course, when the conveyance of land was made, Philip's wife, Sarah, would have been Mary's step mother. The copy of the land deed indicated that Philip and Sarah sold cheaply (\$1.00) to Mary. The deed has it located near Stueben's Lick Run in Hopkins County, Kentucky.

To put history into perspective, 1856, the year of the land transfer, was the year Republican Party opened its first national convention in Philadelphia on June 17. It finally was 1860 when that effort produced its first Presidential candidate, Abraham Lincoln, who, of course went on to serve our nation as President. Lincoln is my 30th cousin, three times removed.

Source:http://www.ushistory.org/gop/origins.htm

Notes for Delia King:

Delia King married Philip J. Simons in Kentucky, 1824. They gave issue to seven children, the last of which was born in 1848.

We assume that she died, and that it was anytime between the birth of the last child and July 30, 1850, the date that the Census taker visited the family for the US 1850 Census, which showed her absence. Marital status was not shown on the 1850 census, so we cannot know whether her husband was a widower or not at that time.

- 106. Lemuel Green Hewlett (son of Martin Hewlett and Jane Henry Moseley) was born on Feb 24, 1790 in Greene County, South Carolina. He died on Jun 20, 1877 in Hanson, Kentucky. He married Rebecca J. Harvey (daughter of Lemuel Harvey and Lavina Skinner) in Oct 1817.
- 107. **Rebecca J. Harvey** (daughter of Lemuel Harvey and Lavina Skinner) was born on Mar 30, 1791 in Muhlenberg County, Kentucky. She died on Nov 03, 1860 in Hanson, Kentucky.

Notes for Lemuel Green Hewlett:

I am indebted to Haydon Fouke of Lecanto, Florida who sent an e-mail message to me January 28, 2005 in response to my Simons data posted on the Internet. He relayed the story that Lemuel served with GeneralAndrew Jackson in the Battle of New Orleans. In that battle, Lemuel got two fingers shot off. The story goes that General Jackson rode upon horseback to Lemuel, gave him his personal kerchief to wrap around the bleeding stumps and urged him to get back to the fighting.

The family kept the kerchief for years, until it was lost in a fire.

"On January 8, 1815, Lemuel he lost his left thumb, in battle. I (TheHewlett biographer) treasure is a photograph presented to me by Mrs. JohnHewlett of Madisonville, in Kentucky, which shows him minus his left thumb. Lemuel was born Feb 24, 1790 and died June 20 1877."

Source: Jean Hewlett, e-mail of June 25, 2006

Most likely, the loss of the left thumb was at the Battle of NewOrleans, as that certainly is the date of this historic occasion in American History. He lost if January 15, 1815, the date of the decisive victory for the Americans.

Source: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Battle_of_New_Orleans

"Lemuel served as a private in the war of 1812, with Capt. Alney McLean's Company of Michessons Regiment and saw action in the Battle of New Orleans."

Source: Jean Hewlett, e-mail of June 25, 2006

Captain Jean Gaw Buckley (US Army Retired) met with me at the Dallas Public Library in

February 2011. She shared much material with me, including a photocopy of Oscar Truman Hewlett's "History of the Hewlett Family, from which much benefit has been mined.

Lemuel served as a Private in the War of 1812 with Captain Alney McLeon's Company of the Michessons Regiment, and saw action in the Battle of New Orleans.

Lemuel and Rebecca were farmers, and were buried with their children on their farm, about two miles out from Madisonville, Kentucky.

Notes for Rebecca J. Harvey:

Rebecca Harvey was born the month before Samuel Morse (4/27/1791 -4/2/1872) was born, the American painter and developer of thetelegraph

Source:http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Samuel_F._B._Morse

- 108. **Joseph E. Lewis Eubank** (son of James Eubank and Margaret "Peggy" Lewis) was born on May 09, 1763 in Charlottesville, Virginia. He died on Oct 11, 1850 in Glasgow, Barren, Kentucky. He married **Elizabeth Glenn White**.
- 109. **Elizabeth Glenn White** (daughter of Henry White and Elizabeth Glenn) was born on Nov 24, 1774 in Charlottesville, Virginia. She died about 1826 in Barren County, Kentucky.
- 112. **Stephen Chapman** (son of William Chapman and Anne Chapman) was born on Oct 28, 1711 in Ashford, Windham County, Connecticut. He died in 1770. He married **Zerviah Sanger**.
- 113. **Zerviah Sanger** was born on Dec 21, 1718 in Ashford, Windham County, Connecticut. She died on Apr 15, 1812 in Ashford, Windham County, Connecticut.
- 120. **Joseph Duncan Abney** (son of Paul Collins Abney and Dorothy "Dollie" Rutherford) was born about 1802 in Spartanburg, South Carolina. He died between 1864-1870 in Hopkins County, Texas. He married **Sarah Searcy** about 1828.
- 121. Sarah Searcy was born about 1812 in Spartanburg, South Carolina.

Notes for Joseph Duncan Abney:

Joseph was a Justice of the Peace in Hinds County, Mississippi. He recorded a deed on January 14, 1831 in Hinds County. It was witnessed by Robert Rutherford Abney. Conjecture is that the family left Hinds for Rankin County after that 1831 deed transaction, which makes Paul's likely 1829 birth to be in Hinds County. He may have been a sometimes Baptist preacher, but that fact eludes confirmation.

Now, 1829 was the year before Indians ceded the land to the advancing march of the settling white people in the Mississippi territory. This was really the beginning of the Anglo populating of Mississippi. The plantations sprouted soon, and the institution of slavery established itself in Mississippi.

Joseph also was a preacher, apparently a circuit rider of sorts, as we do not have information that he pastored a local congregation. He was a noted orator, and was called upon with some frequecy to speak on a number of topics, as reported in the autobiographical book privately published and cited in the footnotes of this paper by Dr.James A. Abney, M.D.

122. James Fullerton He married Adaline Heflin.

123. Adaline Heflin

- 124. **John Dixon** was born about 1800 in West Virginia. He died after 1818. He married **Sarah Benedict** (daughter of Felix Benedict and Clarissa Hubbell) about 1817.
- 125. **Sarah Benedict** (daughter of Felix Benedict and Clarissa Hubbell) was born about 1800 in West Virginia. She died after 1818.

Notes for John Dixon:

We do not have much about the parents of Felix B. Dixon, who was bornin Ohio. However, the 1880 U.S. Census recording the family of FelixB. Dixon in San Augustine County, Texas included an inquiry about thelocation of the parents of the people being counted. The informationfor Felix indicates that his parents were born in West Virginia.

We have undocumented information that Felix's parents' names are these recorded here.

126. Joseph L. Shanks He died before Jul 1841 in San Augustine County, Republic of Texas.

Generation 8

- 128. **John Jumper** (son of Johannes Conrad Jumper and Unknown) was born about 1750. He died before 1800.
- 160. **John Nason** (son of Richard Nason and Margaret Lancaster) was born about 1745 in Youghal, East County Cork, Ireland. He died in 1813 in Youghal, East County Cork, Ireland. He married **Catherine Atkins** (daughter of William Atkins and Sarah) about 1765.
- 161. **Catherine Atkins** (daughter of William Atkins and Sarah) was born about 1745. She died in 1813.

Notes for John Nason:

John was born the same year as was born Moses Mendelssohn (9/26/1729 -1/4/1786), the German-Jewish philosopher, critic and Bible translator.

Source:http://plato.stanford.edu/entries/mendelssohn/

John was born the year that Catherine II (5/2/1729 - 11/17/1796) wasborn. She was the German-born empress of Russia (1762-96).

Source:http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Catherine_II_of_Russia

The Nasons were an aristocratic family, owning land in Cork andWaterford Counties. They were of the Anglican faith, joining theChurch of Ireland when they arrived in Eire.

Source:Marcia Jackson Cloman, "Journey of Joy - The Nason Family of the Southern United States," The Reprint Company, Publishers, Spartanburg, South Carolina 2005, Page 5.

Notes for Catherine Atkins:

Catherine was born the same year as John Hancock (1/12/1737 -10/8/1793), American revolutionary leader, was born.

Source:http://www.ushistory.org/declaration/signers/hancock.htm

162. Thomas Griffith was born in 1748 in London, England. He died in 1802. He married

Margaret Sarah.

163. Margaret Sarah

- 192. Johann Peter "Peter" Scherp (son of Jacob A. Scherp and Maria Catherina "Anna" Becker) was born between 04 Aug 1710-25 Mar 1712 in New York State. He died on Feb 17, 1781 in Germantown, Columbia County, New York. He married Eva Schneider (daughter of Johann Wilhelm "William" Schneider and Anna Gertraud Betzer) on May 13, 1735 in Catskill Dutch Reformed Church, Germantown, New York.
- 193. **Eva Schneider** (daughter of Johann Wilhelm "William" Schneider and Anna Gertraud Betzer) was born in 1712. She died on Nov 30, 1780.

Notes for Johann Peter "Peter" Scherp:

Johann Peter Scherp, known as Peter, was born the year Queen Anne of England established the Ascot races. and it was the year Jonathan Swift published the *Conduct of the Allies*. (Source: "The Timetables of History" 3rd Revised Edition, Bernard Grun, Simon & Schuster, New York 1991, pages 326-327)

Peter is my fourth great grandfather. He was a first generation birth in America for this family line of German Palatine emigrants. It is evident that Peter and his wife, Eva, were prominently known citizens among the Palatine community settling in the New York section of this New World. They were baptism sponsors for quite a number of various infants in several different Reformed Churches of New York.

Peter Sharp was a freeholder at East Camp in 1763 (Albany County Freeholders Register). This means he owned land.

He was a store owner that was subjected to some burglary. Peter's death came between the writing of his will in December 1780, which was at a time of illness, and when the will was proved in public record in February 1782. The will cites his sons George and Peter, his daughters Maria (wife of Peter Wisner), Gertie (wife of Frederick Maul), Margareta (unmarried), Catherina (widow of Philip Rockefeller & their children Petrus, Eva and Catharina). The executors were sons George and Petrus, along with friends Christian Philip and Henrick Will. Witnesses were Johannes Peter Russ, Abraham J. Delameter and Gerhard Daniel Cock, minister.

Peter died the year Herschel discovered the planet, Uranus. (Source: "The Timetables of History" 3rd Revised Edition, Bernard Grun, Simon & Schuster, New York 1991, page 363)

Notes for Eva Schneider:

The year of Eva's birth hailed the occurrence of the first fines for speeding being levied against reckless carters in Philadelphia! It also was the year that the first sperm whale was captured by anAmerican, an event that radically changed for the good the Nantucket, Massachusetts whaling business.

Source: Gorton Carruth, "Encyclopedia of American Facts & Dates,"Harper & Row, Publishers, New York, 1st edition 1817, 8th edition1987, page 49.

194. **Henrich Teater** (son of Georg Teater and Anna Marie Meyer) was born in Pfalz, Germany. He married **Beletje Neher** (daughter of Johann Frans "Frans" Neher and Rebecca Kohl) in 1747 in St. Peter's Lutheran Church, Rhinebeck, New York.

195. Beletje Neher

- 200. Samuel Kellogg (son of Isaac Kellogg and Mary Webster Brace) was born on Nov 05, 1718 in New Hartford, Litchfield County, Connecticut. He died in 1770 in Poultney, Rutland, Vermont. He married Mary Steele (daughter of Thomas Steele and Mary Bradford) on Jul 08, 1741.
- 201. **Mary Steele** (daughter of Thomas Steele and Mary Bradford) was born on Nov 15, 1718. She died about 1770.
- 204. **Samuel Bishop** (son of Samual Bishop and Mehitabel Spencer) was born on Apr 16, 1746 in Guiford, Connecticut. He died on Mar 20, 1813 in Hudson, Ohio. He married **Lois Gaylord** on Dec 13, 1770 in Grandby, Windsor County, Connecticut.
- 205. **Lois Gaylord** was born on Dec 18, 1750 in New Haven, Wallinford County, Connecticut. She died on Mar 14, 1820.
- 208. **Philip Simons** was born in 1769. He died on Jul 11, 1802. He married **Mary** before 1784 in Logan County, Kentucky.
- 209. Mary was born about 1765 in Logan County, Kentucky. She died after 1802.

Notes for Philip Simons:

This Philip Simons is my fourth great grandfather. It appears, from the family trees posted on Ancestry.com, that two sets of twins were born into this family, judging from the birth dates, which are only expressed in whole years.

Source: http://www.familysearch.org/Eng/search/IGI/individual_record.asp? recid=100399350077&lds=1®ion=11&frompage=99

Phillip is the most distant ancestor for whom my records has any information. He would have only been seven years old when the American Revolution started, and his 1802 death made him a fairly young man, dying at age 43, though not too uncommon in those days.

- 210. **Stephen King** (son of Benjamin King and Margaret) was born about 1765 in Virginia. He died in 1814 in Manasas, Prince William, Virginia. He married **Precilla** about 1788.
- 211. **Precilla** was born about 1770 in Virginia.
- 212. Martin Hewlett (son of Thomas Hewlett and Margaret Villon) was born in 1754 in Halifax, Henry County, Virginia. He died in 1816 in Muhlenburg County, Kentucky. He married Jane Henry Moseley (daughter of Samuel Moseley and Martha Hodges) in 1783 in New Kent County, Virginia.
- 213. **Jane Henry Moseley** (daughter of Samuel Moseley and Martha Hodges) was born on May 15, 1762 in Halifax, Henry County, Virginia. She died on Oct 31, 1831 in Muhlenburg County, Kentucky.

Notes for Martin Hewlett:

Martin, my fourth great grandfather, married Jane Henry Moseley. Martin served in the American Revolutionary War and in the War of 1812.

They resided in Henry County, Virginia, from where they moved in 1786, going to Green County, South Carolina, then Warren County, Kentucky, settling down eventually in Hopkins County, Kentucky about the year of 1800.

By that time, the family included eight children.

Researcher Gene Gaw told me that in 1814, Martin sold his property on Pond River and moved to Muhlenberg County, Kentucky, leaving his grandson, whom he had been overseeing as an apprentice in his business, to remain in Hopkins County, Kentucky.

Samuel Hewlett was the Administrator of Martin's estate. Both Martin and Jane are reportedly buried together on the Fitzgerald Farm, near Anton, Kentucky, even though their deaths were 15 years apart, Martin going first.

Notes for Jane Henry Moseley: Jane's will text was cited in Oscar Truman Hewlett's "History of the Hewlett Family." It gave quite a bit of information on her family. The executor designated was James Hicklin, indicated as a trusted friend. Jane died 15 years after her husband died in 1816.

- 214. **Lemuel Harvey** (son of William Harvey and Lenah Gentry) was born before 1765. He married **Lavina Skinner**.
- 215. Lavina Skinner was born about 1765.
- 216. **James Eubank** (son of John Eubank and Elizabeth Raines) was born in 1725 in Charlottesville, Virginia. He died on Dec 12, 1799 in Charlottesville, Virginia. He married **Margaret "Peggy" Lewis**.
- 217. Margaret "Peggy" Lewis was born about 1730 in Virginia. She died before 1799.

Notes for James Eubank:

Taylorsville, Williamson County, Texas, later changed to the town of Taylor, is where James' family moved in the 1850's. Nearby Circleville was where a depot was erected to serve the farming interests along the San Gabriel River. Joseph and James Eubank operated tin and pewter shop, called "DeWitt Clinton Hayslip's Blacksmith-Wheel-Wright Shop."

During the 1860's time of the War Between the States, these two men operated a cotton card factory, run by John White and Joseph Eubank, Jr.

- 218. **Henry White** was born about 1745 in Virginia. He died in Aug 1810 in Barren County, Kentucky. He married **Elizabeth Glenn** in 1765 in Charlottesville, Virginia.
- 219. **Elizabeth Glenn** was born about 1750 in Virginia. She died in 1810 in Barren County, Kentucky.
- 224. William Chapman (son of William Chapman and Elisabeth Smith) was born on May 30, 1682 in Ipswich, Essex County, Massachuetts. He died in Feb 1753 in Woodstock, Connecticut. He married Anne Chapman.
- 225. Anne Chapman was born in 1690 in Woodstock, Windham County, Connecticut.

Notes for William Chapman:

Just the month before William was born, French explorer Robert LaSalle reached the Mississippi River on April 9, 1682.

Source:http://library.thinkquest.org/4034/lasalle.html

Notes for Anne Chapman:

The first paper money in America was issued by the colony of Massachusetts on February 3, 1690, the year of Anne's birth.

Source:http://www.nytimes.com/learning/general/onthisday/20060203.html?th&emc=th

240. **Paul Collins Abney** (son of Nathaniel Abney and Lucy Norvell) was born about 1778 in Barnwell, South Carolina. He died in Mississippi. He married **Dorothy "Dollie" Rutherford**.

241. Dorothy "Dollie" Rutherford

Notes for Paul Collins Abney:

Paul is mentioned in a Power of Attorney wherein he and his brother, Nathaniel, both of Spartanburg, SC, as heirs of Joseph Abney, empowering Joseph Voffard, Sr. to take charge of Joseph's estate and to manage it on their behalf.

We are uncertain of Paul's wife's name, but think it may have been a Miss Duncan. We also have information to lead us to think she is Dorothy Rutherford. We do know know whether two wives existed or not.

250. **Felix Benedict** (son of Elisha Benedict and Jerusha Starr) was born in 1767. He died in 1829. He married **Clarissa Hubbell**.

251. Clarissa Hubbell

Generation 9

256. Johannes Conrad Jumper He married Unknown.

257. Unknown

Notes for Johannes Conrad Jumper:

Thanks to Sherman E. Jumper, of Eads, Tennessee, we have captured a narrative of the Jumper family. He says that from 1745 to 1760, and later, many immigrants from the Rhine section of Germany and the northern cantons of Switzerland, including our immigrant ancestor, Johannes Conrad SCHOMBERT, alias John Conrad JUMPER, settled in the present-day areas of Lexington, Orangeburgh, Calhoun and Newberry Counties in South Carolina. The area was also included in the colonial Berkeley and Craven Counties (the county boundaries were not clear) and is sometimes referred to as the Saxe-Gotha Township.

In 1769, this area was included in the Orangeburgh District, and reverted to become a part of the district again in 1791. In 1804, it was revitalized again as Lexington District. Calhoun County was formed in 1908 from portions of Orangeburgh and Lexington Counties. Saxe-Gotha is roughly the present-day area of Cayce and West Columbia, South Carolina, in Lexington County. The Jumper, Furtick, Myers, Crim, Spigner, Caver and other families closely allied with them, lived in the area around Sandy Run that today is in both Calhoun andLexington Counties.

Johannes Conrad Schombert probably emigrated from Germany to South Carolina about June, 1745, arriving at the port of Charles Towne (Charleston) on a vessel (possibly named *Friendship*) that carried him from Rotterdam to England, and finally to America. Charleston was not a major port, so there were found no ship passenger lists to consult for Schombert's arrival date. Studying Council Journal records and the South Carolina Gazette for that year, Col Sherman was able to reconstruct the arrival date to be on or about June 21, 1756. Schombert was granted 200 acres on July 7, 1756 in central South Carolina, situated south of the Congaree River in Saxe-Gotha Township, Berkeley County, South Carolina.

Col. Sherman goes on to report that proof showed Schombert took possession of the land grant, that lay near present day Columbia, by1758. Hostile Indians began attacking the settlers in 1759-1760. Schombert, along with other German-Swiss immigrants from the Congarees, enlisted in a militia unit organized by Col. John Chevillett to put down the Cherokee upraising. Conrad served in Lt. Gallman's company for 52 days between November 1759 and January 1760. The payroll document listed his name as Conrad Jumper. This is the first instance where it has been found documentary proof of the Anglicization of his name from Schombert to Jumper.

Conrad Jumper bought other land, including a 100 acre parcel in 1768 from David Siterin. Tax records show he paid quit rents or taxes on his lands from 1768 to 1773, both as Conrad Jumper and Johannes Conrad Schombert. Taxes had been waived for ten years on his original grant, which was officially memorialized in 1758.

On the Siterin parcel, he paid four shillings under the name Jumper. He paid eight shillings under the name Schombert on the land originally granted to him in 1756. He did not pay any taxes in 1774, as he died in 1773. He made a will, but it did not survive. An estate inventory appraised it at about 760 pounds. It is a long list of items you might expect a farmer to possess in terms of equipment and livestock.

The documentation of the name change from Schombert to Jumper is convincing in the equity records. In the transaction dated January 6,1784, the immigrant's three sons, John, Conrad and Peter, sold two parcels of land inherited from their father to John James Haig, the former sheriff. From the release portion, it shows the land was granted to "... Johannes Conrad Schombert, alias John Conrad Jumper..."

Notes for Unknown:

Unfortunately, we have been unable to discover information about Johannes Conrad Jumper's first wife, the mother of his three children.

320. **Richard Nason** (son of Richard Nason and Hester) was born in Antrim, Ireland. He died in Youghal, East County Cork, Ireland. He married **Margaret Lancaster**.

321. Margaret Lancaster

Notes for Richard Nason:

Richard was born the year that William III and Mary II were crowned asjoint sovereigns of Britain.

Source:http://www.britannia.com/history/monarchs/mon51.html

322. William Atkins He married Sarah.

- 323. Sarah
- 384. Jacob A. Scherp (son of Peter Scherp and Margaretha Menke) was born about Feb 1680 in Laubenheim, Germany. He died on Feb 16, 1734 in Livingston Manner, Columbia County, New York. He married Maria Catherina "Anna" Becker on Dec 26, 1702 in Launbenheim, Germany.
- 385. **Maria Catherina "Anna" Becker** was born in Herrstein, Germany. She died between 1712-1725 in Germantown, New York.

Notes for Jacob A. Scherp:

Jacob's ancestral home was in Laubenheim, Germany, five KM south of Bingen. The church books in Laubenheim begin 1659. His first documented appearance in North America was appearance on the Hunter Lists on August 4, 1710.

"A petition from Jacob Sharp, Chistophel Hagadorn and Jacob Shoemaker, dated June 13, 1724, was presented to Gov. Burnet. Captain Jacob Sharp was an officer in the Albany County Militia of ye Palatines Villages in ye Manor of Livingston in 1733 ("Report of the State Historian," vol. I, p. 573)."

Though Jacob obviously was a leader, we have little to report of actual details about his pursuit of life in North America. *Zanger's New York Weekly Journal*, dated May 18, 1734 says,

".....We hear from Livingston's Mannor that one Mr. Jacob Scherp, a noted Trader and Farmer there, on the 16th of February last, had the misfortune to be drowned in Livingston's Creek, by the stumbling of his Horse. His Body was found some days after by his own Son and at a small Schoal in the Mouth of the Creek."

Source: Jones, Henry Z., Jr., "The Palatine Families of New York, Volume II, Picton Press, Rockport, Maine, 1st printing 1985, 4th printing 2001, pages 850-851

Jacob married Maria Catherina Becker in Laubenheim, Germany, December 28, 1702. They bore two sons and two daughters.

Notes for Maria Catherina "Anna" Becker:

Maria was from Herrstein, Germany. Their marriage took place in Jacob's hometown of Laubenheim, however.

Source: Jones, Henry Z., Jr., "The Palatine Families of New York, Volumn II, Picton Press, Rockport, Maine, 1st printing 1985, 4th printing 2001, page 850.

386. Johann Wilhelm "William" Schneider (son of John Dietrich Schneider and Anna Maria Dunschman) was born on Oct 24, 1690 in Germany. He died between 15 Sep 1760-26 Feb 1764 in Rynbeck, Dutchess County, New York. He married Anna Gertraud Betzer about 1711.

387. Anna Gertraud Betzer

Notes for Johann Wilhelm "William" Schneider:

Destined to become the father-in-law of Peter Sharp, husband of hiswife, Eva, Johann is found on the Rotterdam lists of 1709, sailing as single man by the name of Johan Wilhellem Sneiter in the 6th party.

His will named his wife, Gertruy, and included among his children,"Eva, wife of Pieter Scherp."

Notes for Anna Gertraud Betzer:

Anna was undoubtedly a relative, but not necessarily a daughter ofHerman Betzer, a passenger in the 1709 shipping of German Palatines toNew York.

388. **Georg Teater** (son of Johann Thaeter and Anna Maria Meyer) was born in Wurttenburg, Germany. He married **Anna Marie Meyer** (daughter of John Frederick Meyer and Anna Barbara Scheurmann) on Apr 25, 1715 in New York City, New York.

389. Anna Marie Meyer

- 390. **Johann Frans "Frans" Neher** (son of Johann Carl Neher and Louise Hornberger) was born on Jul 04, 1703 in Birkenfeld, Pfalz. He died on Nov 28, 1733. He married **Rebecca Kohl** (daughter of Wilhelm Kohl) on Nov 24, 1724 in New York City, New York.
- 391. Rebecca Kohl (daughter of Wilhelm Kohl) was born in New York City, New York.
- 400. **Isaac Kellogg** (son of Samuel Kellogg and Sarah Day Merrill) was born on Jan 17, 1697 in Hartford, Hartford County, Connecticut. He died on Jul 03, 1787 in Hadley, Hampshire, MA. He married **Mary Webster Brace** (daughter of Jonathan Webster and Dorcas Hopkins) on Dec 26, 1717.
- 401. **Mary Webster Brace** (daughter of Jonathan Webster and Dorcas Hopkins) was born on May 31, 1697 in Hadley, Massachusetts.
- 402. Thomas Steele (son of Samuel Steele and Mercy Bradford) was born on Sep 09, 1681 in Hartford, Hartford County, Connecticut. He died on Nov 27, 1757. He married Mary Bradford (daughter of William Bradford and Alice Richards) on May 10, 1709 in Hartford, Cartford County, Connecticut.
- 403. **Mary Bradford** (daughter of William Bradford and Alice Richards) was born in 1668 in Boston, Suffolk County, Massachusetts. She died on Oct 10, 1720 in Chilmark, Massachusetts.
- 408. **Samual Bishop** (son of Samuel Bishop and Abigail Wetmore) was born on Mar 14, 1699 in Guiford, New Haven County, Connecticut. He died on Mar 30, 1762 in Morris, Litchfield County, Connecticut. He married **Mehitabel Spencer** (daughter of Samuel Spencer Sr. and Deborah Beckley) on Aug 10, 1726 in Connecticut.
- 409. **Mehitabel Spencer** (daughter of Samuel Spencer Sr. and Deborah Beckley) was born on Mar 05, 1698 in Hartford, Hartford County, Connecticut. She died on Sep 09, 1756 in Morris, Litchfield County, Connecticut.
- 420. **Benjamin King** (son of William Alfred King and Sophia Elizabeth Burgess) was born in 1715. He died in 1805 in Virginia. He married **Margaret**.
- 421. Margaret was born in 1820 in Kentucky.
- 424. Thomas Hewlett He married Margaret Villon.
- 425. Margaret Villon
- 426. **Samuel Moseley** (son of Marvill Moseley and Mary Davis) was born about 1735. He died after 1801 in Bushy Creek, Greenville, South Carolina. He married **Martha Hodges** (daughter of Edmund Hodges and Nethanna Nephany Walker) in Jul 1761.
- 427. **Martha Hodges** (daughter of Edmund Hodges and Nethanna Nephany Walker) was born about 1740. She died about 1802 in Brushy Creek, Greenville, South Carolina.
- 428. **William Harvey** was born in 1749 in Orange County, Virginia`. He died in 1836 in Roane

County, Tennessee. He married Lenah Gentry.

- 429. Lenah Gentry was born in 1749 in Virginia. She died in 1814 in Roane County, Tennessee.
- 432. **John Eubank** (son of Thomas Eubank and Martha Harrison) was born in 1680 in Yorkshire County, England. He married **Elizabeth Raines**.
- 433. Elizabeth Raines was born about 1697 in Yorkshire County, England.
- 448. **William Chapman** was born in 1652 in Ipswich, Essex County, Massschusetts. He died in 1732 in Amesbury, Windham County, Connecticut. He married **Elisabeth Smith**.
- 449. **Elisabeth Smith** was born in 1657 in Ipswich, Essex County, Massachusetts. She died in 1732 in Windham, Connecticut.

Notes for William Chapman:

This William, born in 1642 in Ipswich, Essex County, Massschusettes, is the earliest Chapman about which my data gathering has been able to include. He was born the year Maryland was founded by English colonists sent by the second Lord Baltimore.

Source:http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Maryland

"Chapman is English: occupational name for a merchant or trader, Middle English 'chapman,' Old English, 'ceapmann,' a compound of 'ceap' or 'barter,' or 'bargain,' 'price,' 'property The name was brought independently to North America from England by numerous different bearers from the 17th Century onward. John Chapman (sic)was one of the free planters who assented to the 'Fundamental Agreement' of the New Haven Colony on June 4, 169."

Source: Patrick Hanks, Editor, Dictionary of American Family Names,Oxford University Press, New York, New York, 2003, Card #929.40973D554 2003 V.1, Dallas Public Library, Genealogical Section, page 318.

William was born the year the first Oberammergau Passion Play was done, 1642. He lived until 1732, when he died and is presumed interred at Amesbury, Windham County, Connecticut.

Source:http://www.oberammergau.de/ot_e/passionplay/

There is one character of fame in the Chapman line to whom it would be desirable to document relationship. However, tracking down the actual connection has eluded me. I feel in my heart that there should be no doubt that I am a family relative of one John Chapman.

So, who is John Carpenter? He is the American pioneer and folkloric figure known as Johnny Appleseed!

He was the nurseryman who strove to spread the planting of apple trees over a wide area of America. He was born September 26, 1774, in Leominster, Massachusetts, which was then British America. It was just as the nation was about to be born!

He planted apple trees in the states of Massachusetts, Pennsylvania, Ontario (in what became in Canada), Ohio, Indiana, Illinois and in West Virginia. Johnny also was a missionary for what was called The New Church, a Christian Church with Swedenborgian orientation, using a mixture of Congregational and Epscopal polity to govern itself. More can be read about Johnny Appleseed here:

https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Johnny_Appleseed

John Chapman died at age 70 on March 18, 1845 in Fort Wayne, Indiana. His parents were Nathaniel Chapman and Elizabeth Simonds.

William Chapman and his wife, Elizabeth Smith, bore four children: William, Elizabeth, John and Ann.

- 480. **Nathaniel Abney** (son of Abraham Abney and Cassandra Meredith) was born in 1753 in Halifax County, Virginia. He died in Feb 1788 in Barnwell, South Carolina. He married **Lucy Norvell** (daughter of James Norvell and Mary Spraggins) in 1776 in South Carolina.
- 481. Lucy Norvell (daughter of James Norvell and Mary Spraggins) was born about 1758 in Halifax County, Virginia. She died between 1790-1792 in South Carolina.

Notes for Nathaniel Abney:

Nathaniel was a physician. He resided in South Carolina with his family, and lived in Barnwell. He was reported killed in a duel with another physician, but documentation on this is elusive. His will was made July 1, 1787 and proved March 11, 1788. It mentioned his wife and children, but fails to name the children.

Nathaniel was a 26th cousin to General George Washington. Their common ancestor was Eystein Glumra Ivarsson, their 25th great grandfather.

Revolutionary services are found in Records of the Historical Commission of South Carolina. Listed are these items about him:

1. Nathaniel Abney made claim before William Spraggins and MathewWillis for one gray mare about 12.5 hands high, 7 years old, branded, appraised to be worth 90 pounds (English currency) that was lost in Brandon's Regiment.

2. One claim for pay was Mr. Nathaniel Abney 343 a/c duty in the militia as a private since the reduction of Charleston; also a bay mare lost in the militia, total amounting to currency L or sterling 24.

3. State of South Carolina to Nathaniel Abney 1781 To board, apparatus and attendance on a wounded man 35, On two wounded men 15.

96 District personally appeared Nathaniel Abney, MD, Certified byThomas Brandon, Col., and Maj. Atterson

4. State troops took one sorrel horse and gray mare which were the property of Nathaniel Abney, a fact sworn to by his father, Dr.Abraham Abney, on October 4, 1783.

His February 1788 duel with another physician ended with Nathaniel's death. We have no information about why the duel was challenged and by which one of the two combatants.

We understand that Sons of the American Revolutionary War lineage number 708092, Texas Society number 789 of John Hensell would enable connected relatives to qualify for SAR membership. Nathaniel's Revolutionary services are found in Records of the Historical Commission of South Carolina (A.A.12; W343; C.S.).

482. James Rutherford He married Drucilla Brooks.

483. Drucilla Brooks

- 500. Elisha Benedict (son of Captain Thomas Benedict and Abigail Hoyt) was born on Apr 02, 1736 in Danbury, Connecticut. He died on Aug 26, 1798 in Canada. He married Jerusha Starr.
- 501. Jerusha Starr was born in 1727. She died in 1799.

Notes for Elisha Benedict:

Capt. Elisha Benedict (1736-1798) and his three sons were captured by Indians in New York state in 1776, taken to Canada and were held therefor two and a half years, according to Margaret Benefict Fawcett of Utica, New York and her e-mail letter of May 9, 2005. Capt. Benedict was the American Revolutionary soldier on whose line was the entrance to the Daughters of the American Revolution organization for Margaret.

Generation 10

512. Schombert

- 640. Richard Nason (son of John Nason) was born in England. He married Hester.
- 641. Hester
- 642. William Lancaster He married Margaret.
- 643. Margaret
- 768. **Peter Scherp** (son of Otto Scherp and Margaretha Kerb) was born about 1660 in Laubenheim, Germany. He died about 1690. He married **Margaretha Menke** (daughter of Thielman Menck and Apollonia) on Nov 24, 1674.
- 769. **Margaretha Menke** (daughter of Thielman Menck and Apollonia) was born about 1650 in Laubenheim, Germany.

Notes for Peter Scherp:

His dates of birth and of death are not certain, but the confidence is that he was deceased by 1690. Peter was a warden at the church in Laubenheim.

Notes for Margaretha Menke:

- 772. John Dietrich Schneider He married Anna Maria Dunschman.
- 773. Anna Maria Dunschman
- 776. **Johann Thaeter** He married **Anna Maria Meyer** (daughter of Johann Fridrich Meyer) on Apr 26, 1715.
- 777. Anna Maria Meyer
- 778. **John Frederick Meyer** He died in 1709 in Wurttenburg, Germany. He married **Anna Barbara Scheurmann**.

779. Anna Barbara Scheurmann

780. **Johann Carl Neher** He died on Jan 25, 1733. He married **Louise Hornberger** (daughter of Franz Hornberger) on Mar 08, 1701 in Birkenfeld.

781. Louise Hornberger

Notes for Johann Carl Neher:

Johann was a Palatine volunteer in the Canadian expedition of 1711.He was naturalized with his son, Frans, at Kingston in 1715.

782. Wilhelm Kohl

- 800. **Samuel Kellogg** (son of Joseph Kellogg and Joanne Foote) was born on Sep 28, 1662 in Hadley, Massachusetts. He died on Jan 17, 1710 in Hatfield, Hampshire, Connecticut. He married **Sarah Day Merrill** (daughter of John Merrill and Sarah Margaret Watson) on Sep 22, 1687 in Hartford, Connecticut.
- 801. **Sarah Day Merrill** (daughter of John Merrill and Sarah Margaret Watson) was born on Sep 19, 1664 in Hartford, Hartford County, Connecticutt. She died in 1719 in Hartford, Hartford County, Connecticutt.

Notes for Samuel Kellogg:

"A family note indicates the possibility that Samuel was reared from1669 in the family of Col. Nathaniel STANLEY, of Hadley and Hartford,Connecticut.

"This presents some interesting relationships, since Nathaniel STANLEY(1638-1712) was the son of Thomas STANLEY and Benet TRITTON, and his mother married second Gregory WOLTERTON, adoptive father of John MERRILL, father of Sarah who became the wife of Samuel. And NathanielSTANLEY married Sarah BOOSEY, sister of Hannah, first wife of JohnPRATT, father of Ruth who married Wilterton MERRILL, son of John and brother of Sarah who became the wife of Samuel.

"Samuel purchased land in the South Meadow in Hartford, Connecticut1691, sold it in 1705 and purchased land in West Hartford, Connecticut. He was a Deacon of Second Church at Hartford, Connecticut, where he and wife were admitted Mar. 17, 1695. MarriedSep. 22, 1687, Hartford, Connecticut."

Source:http://kinnexions.com/smlawson/kellogg.htm#SKellogg

- 802. **Jonathan Webster** (son of Robert Webster and Elizabeth Treat) was born on Jan 09, 1657 in Middletown, Middlesex Countyk, Connecticut. He died in 1735 in Hartford, Hartford County, Connecticut. He married **Dorcas Hopkins**.
- 803. **Dorcas Hopkins** (daughter of Stephen Hopkins and Dorcas Bronson) was born in 1660 in Hartford, Hartford County, Connecticut. She died in 1695 in Hartford, Hartford County, Connecticut.
- 804. **Samuel Steele** was born on Mar 15, 1662 in Hartford, Hartford County, Connecticut. He died in 1710 in Hartford, Hartford County, Connecticut. He married **Mercy Bradford** (daughter of William Bradford and Alice Richards) on Sep 16, 1680 in Hartford, Connecticut.
- 805. **Mercy Bradford** (daughter of William Bradford and Alice Richards) was born on Sep 02,

1660 in Boston, Suffolk, Massachusetts.

- 806. William Bradford (son of William "The father of American History" Bradford and Alice Carpenter) was born on Jun 17, 1624 in Plymouth, Massachusetts. He died on Feb 20, 1704 in Plymouth, Massachusetts. He married Alice Richards (daughter of Thomas Richard) on Apr 23, 1650 in Plymouth Colony, Massacheutts.
- 807. **Alice Richards** (daughter of Thomas Richard) was born about 1627 in England. She died on Dec 12, 1671 in Plymouth, Massacheuttes.
- 816. **Samuel Bishop** (son of John Bishop and Susannah Coldman) was born on Oct 23, 1670 in Guilford, New Haven County, Connecticut. He died on Feb 17, 1753 in Guilford, New Haven County, Connecticut. He married **Abigail Wetmore** on Apr 20, 1697.
- 817. **Abigail Wetmore** was born on Nov 06, 1678 in Middletown, Middlesex County, Connecticut. She died on Sep 07, 1722.
- 818. **Samuel Spencer Sr.** (son of Obadiah Spencer and Mary Disborough) was born about 1670 in Hartford, Hartford County, Connecticut. He died in 1756 in Middletown, Middlesex County, Connecticut. He married **Deborah Beckley** (daughter of John Beckley and Hanna Deming) in 1695 in Hartford, Hartford County, Connecticut.
- 819. **Deborah Beckley** (daughter of John Beckley and Hanna Deming) was born in 1678 in Hartford, Hartford County, Connecticut. She died on Dec 14, 1740 in Connecticut.

Notes for Samuel Spencer Sr.:

Samuel Spencer and his wife, Deborah Beckley, are the ancestors in common with the famous financier John Pierpont (J. P.) Morgan. They are Morgan's third great grandparents and they are my sixth great grandparents.

Notes for Deborah Beckley:

Deborah Beckley married Samuel Spencer, Sr. Some genealogical notes think she died about 1756 in Wethersfield, Hartford County, Connecticut. Another note we've found says she died December 14, 1740 somewhere in Connecticut. So, the unresolved discrepancy is 16 years.

- 840. **William Alfred King** (son of William King and Judith Peyton) was born on Mar 10, 1684 in Brooke, Stafford County, Virginia. He died on Dec 21, 1727 in Stafford County, Virginiia. He married **Sophia Elizabeth Burgess** in 1710.
- 841. Sophia Elizabeth Burgess was born about 1690.
- 852. **Marvill Moseley** (son of Marvel Moseley and Sarah Blaise) was born on May 21, 1682. He died in 1753. He married **Mary Davis**.
- 853. Mary Davis (daughter of David Davis and Mary) was born on May 13, 1705.
- 854. **Edmund Hodges** (son of Thomas Hodges and Christian Woodson) was born in 1709. He died on Dec 17, 1782. He married **Nethanna Nephany Walker**.

- 855. Nethanna Nephany Walker (daughter of John Walker) was born in 1711. She died in 1784.
- 864. **Thomas Eubank** was born about 1650 in Yorkshire County, England. He died on Feb 09, 1732 in Talbot, Maryland. He married **Martha Harrison** about 1680.
- 865. Martha Harrison was born about 1654.
- 960. **Abraham Abney** (son of Dannett Abney) was born on Dec 27, 1702 in Abingdon Parish, Gloucester, Virginia. He died after 1783 in Either Virginia or South Carolina. He married **Cassandra Meredith**.

961. Cassandra Meredith

Notes for Abraham Abney:

Dr. Abney is the ancestor common to Mr. Joe B. Abney, Jr. of Austin, Travis County, Texas and me. Joe has shared a lot of Abney family information to enhance my records, for which I am most appreciative. Joe is my sixth cousin, once removed. Dr. Abney is the fifth great grandfather of Joe and the sixth great grandfather of mine. Joe was the sixth cousin to my father, the Presbyterian minister who baptised Joe.

In 1742, Dr. Abney presented a petition to the Virginia House of Burgesses, claiming discovery of a cure for cancer by some simples of the natural growth of the colony, and requested encouragement and reward after he had made the demonstration. He went with his family circa 1769, settling in District #96 in South Carolina.

Transactions evidencing his presence in Virginia: Abraham granted 570acres jointly with his brother, Dannett Abney, Jr., June 30, 1733. He patented 230 acres in Hanover County, August 20, 1748. He patented343 acres on Calloe Creek, Halifax County, May 23, 1763. He granted162 acres in Luneberg County to Thomas Spraggins, August 1, 1757. He and his wife, Cassandra, granted 172 acres in Hanover County to Isaac Brudney, October 4, 1745. Abraham granted land in Halifax County, 250 acres to Thomas Spraggins on February 18, 1757 and 400 acres to Thomas' Children on December 2, 1756. On April 3, 1764, he sold 400 acres in Halifax County on Cullaboe Creek to Nathaniel Abney (son of William Abney and Sarah Spraggins) for 100 pounds, which he had patented in the Parish of Antrim on May 23, 1763. He granted 242acres at Calbar, Halifax County to Benjamin Vaughn, July 2, 1778. Along with the same Nathaniel Abney, then of Long Cane Mills, District 96, South Carolina, Abraham granted 400 acres in Antrim Parish, Halifax County to Charles Gallaway on February 18, 1775.

Abraham Abney furnished supplies to and assisted the Continental Army in the American Revolutionary War as show by these transactions: In1781, he released a bay horse for the service of General Picken's Brigade, proven by oath of Samuel Mays and William Hill to be worth 60 pounds on June 4, 1783, attended by D. Hopkins, Justice of the Peace, South Carolina. He swore before the same JP on October 4, 1783 that a party of state troopers took from his son, Nathaniel Abney, one sorrel horse and one gray mare, worth a combined value of 160 pounds. Dr.Abney made claim for one bay horse lost in service in 1781, worth 60pounds.

Notes for Cassandra Meredith:

Casandra received a grant of 640 acres, situated in OrangeburghDistrict and laying in the fork between the South Edisto River andMactier Creek, on January 1, 1787 for an unspecified price.

962. James Norvell He married Mary Spraggins.

963. Mary Spraggins

- Captain Thomas Benedict was born on Nov 09, 1694. He died on Jul 04, 1776. He married
 Abigail Hoyt.
- 100 **Abigail Hoyt** was born in 1712.

1.

Notes for Captain Thomas Benedict: Thomas Benedict is my 6th great grandfather. He served as a Captain in the 8th Company, 2nd New York Continental Regiment on June 29, 1775.

This is reported in the 1930 application to the Sons of the American Revolution (Colorado Society) made by Mr. Eldo Benedict Lane.

Generation 11

- 128 **John Nason** (son of Richard Nason) was born on Dec 11, 1671 in England.
- 0.

128 James

- 2.
- 153 Otto Scherp was born about 1628 in Laubenheim, Germany. He died before 1691. He
 6. married Margaretha Kerb on Nov 20, 1666 in Laubenheim, Germany.

153 Margaretha Kerb

7.

Notes for Otto Scherp:

"Scharff" is thought to be perhaps the earliest German form of our Sharp(e) name. Perhaps it was "Von Scharff." It is a South German nickname for an energetic, active person from the Middle High German. One of the most common given names used with it was Otto, which is the name of the earliest ancestor of whom we know, where our story begins. He is my 7th great grandfather.

From the Laubenheim, Germany Church records, we have a marriage date of November 20, 1666. Otto would have been 38 years old at that time, so it is easy to assume that record is the second of his two marriages. We do not have information about his first marriage.

After our family came to North America in 1710, the name changed by the mid 1700's to the English form of Sharp, It is of interest to note, not only its similarity to the German form, but that it's Middle English meaning is 'keen,' "active," and "quick." All of the meanings we see represent attractive, wholesome characteristics with which we would want to identify.

Source: Patrick Hanks, Editor, Dictionary of American Family Names,Oxford University Press, New York, New York, 2003, Card #929.40973D554 2003 V.III, Dallas Public Library, Genealogical Section, pages283 and 331.

German-born Otto Scherp is thought to have had more that one wife, as the Laubenheim Church records said that Peter was by his first wife. We have a name for one of his wives, perhaps his second and last wife. Otto is my 7th great grandfather.

Otto was born the same year as famous John Bunyan was born, author of *Pilgrims Progress*. This was the year that Peter Minuit, Director-General of the Dutch West India Company's settlement in North America, buying the entire island of Manhattan from native American Indian chiefs for merchandise valued at 60 guilders (about \$24). The Dutch colony of New Amsterdam was founded on the Hudson River, not far from where Otto's

grandson, Jacob Scherp, was to settle with some 3,000 other GermanPalatines in 1710.

Source: "The Timetables of History" 3rd Revised Edition, Bernard Grun, Simon & Schuster, New York 1991, page 283.

153 **Thielman Menck** He married **Apollonia**.

- 8.
- 153 **Apollonia** was born in 1619. She died on Sep 10, 1687.
- 154 Anthonius Schneider He married Christiana.
- 4.
- 154 Christiana
- 5.
- 154 Adam Dunschman He married Catherine Frantz.
- 6.
- 154 Catherine Frantz
- 7.
- 155 **Johann Fridrich Meyer** He died before 1715.
- 4.
- 155 Thomas Meyer
- 6.
- 155 Ulrich Scheurmann
- 8.
- 156 Jacob Naher
- 0.
- 156 Franz Hornberger

2.

- Joseph Kellogg (son of Martyn Kellogg and Prudence Bird) was born on Apr 01, 1626 in
 Great Leighs, England. He died on Jun 27, 1707 in Hadley, Hampshire County, Massachusetts. He married Joanne Foote in 1650 in England.
- Joanne Foote was born about 1628 in Buckland, Monachrorum, Devonshire, England. She
 died on Sep 14, 1666 in Hadley, Hampshire County, Massachuetts.

Notes for Joseph Kellogg:

Lieutenant Joseph Kellogg was born in 1626 on April 1, which had become known as April Fool's day. Why is there an April Fool's Day? In 16th century France, New Year's was celebrated from March 25 to April 1. King Charles IX adopted the Gregorian calendar in 1582 - and suddenly the new year began Jan 1. Many people refused to switch or simply forgot the new date. They were called "April Fish," and their celebrations turned into silly pranks. This "fooling" eventually became a holiday of it's own. It later became a custom in England - and the English brought it to the U.S.

Lt. Kellogg's occupation title was: Sargeant of County Military Company, Lieutenant,

(immigrant)

Joseph and his first wife, Joanne Foote, are my seventh great grandparents. Joseph is the common ancestor for me and the valiant Texas soldier who died March 6, 1836 in the Alamo fighting for the independence of Texas from Mexico, Johnny Benjamin Kellogg. Johnny is descended from Joseph through his second wife, Abigail Terry. They are Johnny's fifth great grandparents.

I do have to say that some descendants from Johnny Benjamin Kellogg who live in Texas today do not believe that is the correct lineage for their Alamo hero. However, they do know know how the line does go back to England. So, for the time being, I will use this line until I'm shown a more credible alternative.

- John Merrill was born on Feb 16, 1635 in Lawford, Essex, England. He died on Jul 18,
 1712 in West Hartford, Hartford County, Connecticutt. He married Sarah Margaret Watson on Sep 23, 1663 in Hartford, Hartfort County, Connecticutt.
- 160 Sarah Margaret Watson was born in 1632 in Hartford, Hartford County, Connecticutt. She died after 1714 in Hartford, Hartford County, Connecticutt.

Notes for John Merrill:

John was born the year the oldest public school in the United States, the Boston Public Latin School, was founded.

Source:http://bls.org/cfml/l3tmpl_history.cfm

- 160 Robert Webster (son of John Webster and Agnus Smith) was born on Nov 17, 1619 in
 4. Cossington, Leicestershire County, England. He died on May 31, 1676 in Hartford, Hartford County, Connecticut. He married Elizabeth Treat (daughter of Richard Treat and Elizabeth) in 1652.
- 160 Elizabeth Treat (daughter of Richard Treat and Elizabeth) was born in Oct 1629 in
 5. Pitminster, Somerset County, England. She died in 1709 in Hartford, Hartford County, Connecticut.
- Stephen Hopkins (son of John Hopkins and Jane Strong) was born on Sep 25, 1614 in
 Cambridge, Middlesex County, Massachusetts. He died on Oct 06, 1689 in Hartford, Hartford County, Connecticut. He married Dorcas Bronson.
- 160 **Dorcas Bronson** was born on Dec 19, 1633 in Hartford, Hartford County, Connecticut. She died on May 13, 1697 in Hartford, Hartford County, Connecticut.
- William Bradford (son of William "The father of American History" Bradford and Alice
 Carpenter) was born on Jun 17, 1624 in Plymouth, Massachusetts. He died on Feb 20, 1704 in Plymouth, Massachusetts. He married Alice Richards (daughter of Thomas Richard) on Apr 23, 1650 in Plymouth Colony, Massacheutts.
- Alice Richards (daughter of Thomas Richard) was born about 1627 in England. She diedon Dec 12, 1671 in Plymouth, Massacheuttes.
- William "The father of American History" Bradford (son of William Bradford and Alice
 Hanson) was born on Mar 15, 1590 in Austerfield, Yorkshire County, England. He died on May 09, 1657 in Plymouth, Massachusetts. He married Alice Carpenter (daughter of Alexander Carpenter and Priscilla Dillen) on Aug 14, 1623 in Plymouth, Massachusetts.

Alice Carpenter (daughter of Alexander Carpenter and Priscilla Dillen) was born on Aug 03,
1590 in Wrington, Sommersetshire, England. She died on Mar 26, 1670 in Plymouth Colony.

Notes for William "The father of American History" Bradford: William Bradford, whose fame came as being Governor of Plymouth Colony during its early decades, is my seventh great grandfather on my father's side of the family. William's birthday is reported March 19, 1590, though other dates have been cited.

William Bradford's father died in 1591 when the son was only a year old. William then went to live with his grandfather, William Bradford, until the grandfather died in 1596. Then, young William went to live with his Uncle Robert Bradford, who resided in the little village of Scrooby, a place five miles from Austerfield, near the estate of the Brewsters, in Nottinghamshire. He joined the church where Rev. Richard Clifton and <u>Rev. John Robinson</u> preached, and was soon numbered among the "<u>Separatists</u>," becoming a leader among them.

His educational opportunities were meager, but he applied self-learning, eventually becoming proficient in Dutch, Latin, French and Greek, along with some study of Hebrew, as he had a curiosity to read the Holy Scripture in its original languages. Obviously, his first language was English. Having workable knowledge of six languages in that day was quite an accomplishment.

William Bradford lived in a turbulent time for England. A Church of England, broken away from Rome, but, headed by the likes of <u>King James I</u>, was not what many Christians wanted, and there arose two groups of objectors known as Puritans and as Separatists. Puritans sought to "purify" the <u>Church of England</u>, so they were not openly "rebellious" to the Church. On the other hand, the Separatists thought the Church of England beyond reform, and thus advocated a "separate" church.

The Rev. John Robinson at <u>Scrooby in Nottinghamshire</u> led this Separatist congregation. The congregation was formed in 1602. They met in the manor home of <u>Postmaster William</u> <u>Brewster</u>. They sought only to worship in their own way. They were peaceful and not confrontational to the Church of England authorities.

The believers in Scrooby were called <u>Brownists</u>, a derisive term in the minds of Church of England leaders, named after Robert Brown, a graduate of <u>Cambridge University</u> who was a catalyst for Protestant dissent in England in the late 1500's. Robinson was likened to Brown in his views. The Puritans were viewed as less threatening, as they had church buildings and could be found, if authorities wished to arrest them. The Separatists or Brownists met in homes and, therefore, had no church buildings.

A Scrooby resident, though not a Brownists congregation member, was our William Bradford. He, being destined to become the governor of Plymouth Colony, wrote of the Brownists's oppressive situation...

"They were both scoffed and scorned by the profane multitude ... and the poor people were so vexed with apparitors, and pusurants and commissarie counts, as truly their affliction was not small."

He also wrote some opposition to the positions taken by the Brownists. Bradford was not only a gifted writer, publishing his famous and moving diary, "A History of Plymouth Plantation," he would also become one of the heroic pioneers of Western history, laying the cornerstones that made possible the building of the American Republic.

However, in Scrooby, William Bradford was just another Christian Citizen. He was a mere teenager when he arrived at Scrooby, son of a farmer. But his potential to be a leader was great, a Governor and a writer. His writings are credited with coining the term of "Pilgrims" to

apply to these Christians who fared the Atlantic winter waters to seek freedom of worship and of pursuing life, unfettered by the shackles seen in the structures prevailing in England.

The Separatists came under persecution by the English government, since it was the Church of England, government-owned and sponsored, from which the group wanted separation. King James viewed them as rebels. In 1607, the people comprising the church at Scrooby made the decision to relocate to <u>Amsterdam</u>, a place where much religious tolerance was practiced. However, the harassment from the English government, including imprisonment of some of the members, including William Brester, delayed them in completing the move till 1608. This was a time when the Netherlands was enjoying its height of commercial shipping success around the then known world, and Amsterdam was considered probably the commercial capital of the world.

There were many Protestant churches in Amsterdam, due to the tolerance, but there was a lot of wrangling amongst themselves, and so the group from Scrooby relocated shortly to <u>Leiden</u>, a little south, along the coast, toward <u>The Hague</u>. In Leiden, they settled down to their various occupations. William Brewster became a publisher of books. Rev. John Robinson taught at the university. Many of these Christians worked in the clothing trades. Isaac Allerton was a tailor. William Bradford and William Pontus were fustian makers. Fustian was a coarse, heavy cloth made of cotton and flax, and it was used for clothing in Europe through the Middle Ages. Its thickness was similar to corduroy or velveteen. It is twilled and has a short pile or nap. So, our William Bradford was a man of the cloth, but he was not a Man of the Cloth, in the senses of the ordained ministry!

Even though freedom was good in Leiden, compared to England, being there was hard. They were not citizens, and so their employment opportunities were bottom-of-the barrel quality. The had jobs where work hours were very long and lowly paid. In addition, their youth seemed overly influenced by the great licentiousness of the youth native to that country, representing manifold temptations and much that was considered evil. So, after some 11 or 12 years in Leiden, the group decided to seek another place to live. They checked into the situation in England in 1620 to seek a solution.

Englishmen had begun to poke around the new world in the early 1600's. Our friends in Leiden followed the news about these developments with increasing interest. In 1607, Jamestown had become the first permanent English settlement. It's ironic that it is proclaimed in history as the first permanent English settlement, because it dissipated into nothingness by shortly after 1700, due to its impractical and inhospitable conditions. Williamsburg and other places flourished later. However, <u>Capt. John Smith</u>, who was a leader with the Jamestown settlement, explored further north and made a detailed map in 1616 all the way up to what became known as New England. It was probably due to Smith's writings that the Leiden Separatists knew of the area and it is quite probable that they had copies of his maps when they made the trip to sail to the New World.

It is recorded that Capt. Smith had offered his services to captain a ship for the Leiden group to the New World, but they declined his offer, allegedly because he was highly priced. They chose an English solder who'd been living in Holland, named <u>Myles Standish</u>. The English Separatists were cautious of Smith's reputation as a swashbuckling braggadocio, which is probably the reason why they declined his services, but he wrote that they turned him down because of his cost.

Not all the Separatists in Leiden came in 1620. In fact, a majority of them remained in Leiden, some coming in a year or two later, others coming several years later, and some stayed, including their pastor, Rev. John Robinson, who stayed till his death March 1, 1624.

The group set sail August 5, 1620, from Delfshaven, South Holland, on the Speedwell with about 120 passengers, but that ship's springing a leak and other forms of inadequacy forced a return, putting in at nearby Plymouth, England. They reloaded onto the Mayflower for their effective launch to the New World. They continued with only 102 passengers, as some chose to stay in England, foregoing the challenge and the fear of the unknown,

settling for the known, displeasing as it was. On November 22, they sighted land, what we later know as Cape Cod. "They had begun their long journey on the dock at Delfshaven to ask God's blessing; they ended it on the sands of Cape Cod, kneeling to thank Him for that blessing."

The Mayflower Compact, was written November 22, 1620 [This was November 11, old style calendar] off the Coast of what was to become Massachusetts. This is the first written agreement for self-government in America. It was signed on the Mayflower, before landing at what became Plymouth Colony. There were 41 adult males who signed the document. Of the 102 passengers, 37 were members of the "Separatists" who were fleeing religious persecution in Europe. Half the colony failed to survive the first winter, but the remainder lived on and prospered. One of the signers was William Bradford, whom some historians have called the Father of American History. He basically was self-educated.

The document was an expression of all the group. However, most likely, it was primarily composed by one writer who, no doubt, received editorial suggestions prior to the mass signing. The composer is never identified, but William Bradford's seemingly being the most literate man among the signers, was most likely the composer. Another reason giving credibility that Bradford composed the Mayflower Compact is that no copy of the original document survives. The only reason we have the words of the Mayflower Compact is that Bradford quoted the document in its entirety in his historical writing of the times. His ability to recollect the complete words gives credence to the idea that he originated the document for the most part.

Listen to the stirring words of this compact:

The Mayflower Compact

"In the name of God, Amen. We, whose names are underwritten, the Loyal Subjects of our dread Sovereign Lord, King James, by the Grace of God, of England, France and Ireland, King, Defender of the Faith.

"Having undertaken for the Glory of God, and Advancement of the Christian Faith, and the Honour of our King and Country, a voyage to plant the first colony in the northern parts of Virginia; do by these presents, solemnly and mutually in the Presence of God and one of another, covenant and combine ourselves together into a civil Body Politick, for our better Ordering and Preservation, and Furtherance of the Ends aforesaid; And by Virtue hereof to enact, constitute, and frame, such just and equal Laws, Ordinances, Acts, Constitutions and Offices, from time to time, as shall be thought most meet and convenient for the General good of the Colony; unto which we promise all due submission and obedience.

"In Witness whereof we have hereunto subscribed our names at Cape Cod the eleventh of November, in the Reign of our Sovereign Lord, King James of England, France and Ireland, the eighteenth, and of Scotland the fifty-fourth. Anno Domini, 1620."

Are not these words compelling as to Christian purpose? Although no one is quite sure what happened to the original copy of the Mayflower Compact, the world is fortunate enough to know what it said, because of the prudent gesture of Governor William Bradford to make a handwritten copy.

Early tragedy hit on December 9, 1620 when Bradford's wife, Dorthea May Bradford, drowned overboard before the band of Pilgrims had embarked upon the land. It was early in the dawn hours, and no one witnessed the fall. The cause of the fall was never determined.

There were only 23 family units to survive that cold winter after arriving November 21, 1620 in what is now <u>Provincetown Harbor</u>. It was not until December 26 that they selected Plymouth on <u>Cape Cod</u> to establish their living quarters. That was less than 50 people by then. However, in 2018, it can be estimated that some 25+ million of our country's estimated 325 million population probably are descended from that original group of 102 Englanders. Most of them were members of the Separatists religious movement in England, which objected to the Roman Catholic likeness of the Church of England.

These Pilgrims had a serious and purposeful dedication to following the ways of God... it is even viewed by some writers that the Pilgrims believed they were establishing the closest thing to God's Kingdom on earth as may be possible. After such was their thirst for advancement and establishment.

These Pilgrims were a mere handful of Light-bearers, on the edge of a vast and Dark Continent. But the Light of Jesus Christ was penetrating further into the heart of America. William Bradford would write with remarkable discernment. "As one small candle may light a thousand, so the light kindled here has shown unto many, yea in some sort to our whole nation . . . We have noted these things so that you might see their worth and not negligently lose what your fathers have obtained with so much hardship."

In the first few days ashore, they were approached by a native American who greeted them with "Welcome Englishmen."

This was quite a surprise to them. However, this Indian native, <u>Samoset</u> by name, had been captured by earlier voyagers and taken to show off in Spain and England for a couple of years, thus his learning English. He'd been returned to his homeland, as probably thought hopelessly untrainable for living in European culture. However, Samoset became a significant communication asset for the Pilgrims.

In April 1621, Bradford succeeded Governor John Carver, who died, as chief executive of Plymouth Colony. Except for five years, Bradford served as governor almost continuously from 1621 through 1656, having been reelected in 30 of the annual election times. In 1621, he negotiated a treaty with <u>Massasoit, the chief</u> of the <u>Wampanoag Indians</u>. Under the treaty, which was vital to the maintenance and growth of the colony, Massasoit disavowed Indian claims to the Plymouth area and pledged peace with the colonists.

Massasoit's problem was that his tribe had been about 30,000, but a pestilence had reduced their number to about 300. He feared being taken over by another Indian tribe. He wisely realized that developing the friendship with the Pilgrims, who had muskets and some military expertise, would be an ally to protect his tribe. That proved correct, and there never was any Indian conflicts during Bradford's life time, except for a few attacks by Captain Miles Standish that were punishment to some Indians who were competitors to Massascoit's tribe.

Bradford was a delegate on four occasions to the <u>New England Confederation</u>, of which he was twice elected president. His History of Plymouth Plantation (1656) is the primary source of information about the pilgrims.

It was the fall of 1621 when this vigorous band of survivors from that first terrible fatal winter first celebrated what we have come to know as a festival of Thanksgiving. Gov. Bradford called for the occasion, and the only two sets of recorded words do we have describing the first Plymouth Thanksgiving come from Edward Winslow and Gov. Bradford:

"Our harvest being gottin in, our Governour sent foure men on fowling, that so we might after a more special manner rejoyce together, after we had gathered the fruit of our labours; they foure in one day killed as much fowle, as with a little helpe beside, served the Company almost a weeke, at which time amongst other Recreations, we exercised our Armes, many of the Indians coming amongst us, and amongst the rest their greatest King Massasoyt, with some nintie men, whom for three dayes we entertained and feasted, and they went out and filled five Deere, which they brought to the Plantation and bestowed on our Governour, and upon the Captaine, and others. And although it be not alwayes so plentifull, as it was at this time with us, yet by the goodnesse of God, we are so farre from want, that we often wish you partakers of our plentie." (W. De D. Love, "Fast & Thanksgiving Days in New England, " Winslow's words, 1895).

and

"They began now to gather in the small harvest they had, and to fit up their houses and dwellings against winter, being all well recovered in health and strength and had all things in good plenty. For as some were thus employed in affairs abroad, others were exercised in fishing, about cod and bass and other fish, of which they took good store, of which every family had their portion. All the summer there was no want; and now began to come in store of fowl, as winter approached, of which this place did abound when they came first (but afterward decreased by degrees). And besides waterfowl, there was great store of wild turkeys, of which they took many, besides venison, etc. Besides, they had about a peck of meal a week to a person, or now since harvest, Indian corn to that proportion. Which made many afterwards write so largely of their plenty here to their friends in England, which were not feigned but true reports."

(http://www.pilgrimhall.org/1stthnks.htm, Gov. Bradford's words).

What has come down in American tradition as the "First Thanksgiving" was a harvest festival. In the spring of 1621, the colonists planted their first crops in <u>Patuxet's</u> abandoned fields. While they had limited success with wheat and barley, their corn crop proved very successful, thanks to Squanto who taught them how to plant corn in hills, using fish as a fertilizer.

In October of 1621, the Pilgrims celebrated their first harvest with feasting and games, as was the custom in England, as well as with prayer. The celebration served to boost the morale of the 50 remaining colonists, and also to impress their allies. Among the Native People attending were Massasoit and 90 Wampanoag men.

Source for preceding two paragraphs: http://www.pilgrimhall.org/f_thanks.htm

Continuing with the earlier quoted source:

An aside note is appropriate at this point, to recognize that this Thanksgiving celebration possibly was not the first Thanksgiving celebration to take place on ground that ultimately became the United States. The first one supposedly happened on April 28, 1598, twenty-two years earlier than the Plymouth Colony celebration.

That first Thanksgiving was a group of Spaniards, led by the Spanish explorer, <u>Juan de</u> <u>Onate</u>, that feasted on the river banks of the Rio Grande after arriving near what now is El Paso, Texas. They had just made it through a 350-mile trek from Santa Barbara, Mexico, across the <u>Chihauhuan Desert</u>, so they had plenty to celebrate. In 1990, the Texas Legislature passed a resolution recognizing <u>San Elizario, Texas</u>, on the outskirts of <u>El Paso</u>, as the site of the first true Thanksgiving. It is also of interest to note that my great uncle, <u>Alfred (Fred) Lansing Sharpe</u>, established a ranch close to San Elizario about 1899, and he was elected a Texas Representative from that area in 1904. Records do not survive today at that county courthouse to determine property locations of ranches, but possibly my great uncle's ranch land was land on which this first Thanksgiving took place.

Source: "Texas Curiosities" by John Kelso, The Globe Pequot Press, Builford, Connecticut, 2000, page 160.

A study of Bradford's writings and other research into the operation of the Plymouth Colony emphasizes that community's commitment was to Christian ideals in service and in work ethic. They not only propagated with many children per household, but they propagated their religious and work ethic in ways which resulted in Plymouth's prosperity and vigor. And even though today's Plymouth is mostly a thriving tourist town, it does anchor the culture and the being of the New World by those who would choose to come as God's children and for His honor and Glory.

One quotation of Bradford is cited in his "History of Plymouth Planation" (Boston, Little, Brown & Company, 1856, page 24):

"Lastly (and which was not least), a great hope and inward zeal the (the Pilgrims) had of laying some good foundations (or at least to make some way thereunto) for the propagating and advancing of the Gospel of the Kingdom of Christ in those remote parts of the world, yea, though they should be but even as stepping-stones unto others fort the performing of so great a work."

But, what about the Protestant spirit of capitalism? Benjamin Hart in his book said that the Puritan's contribution to America's political institutions (included): written constitutions, separation of powers, regular elections, the secret ballot, the federalist principle, religious toleration and separation of church and state. But there is also a strong connection between the rise of Puritanism and the emergence of capitalism.

To appreciate fully that fact, it is worth reflecting briefly on conditions in Europe prior to the economic revolution, which began to take place following the <u>Protestant Reformation</u>. Living standards for most people in medieval Europe were poor. About 90% of the people spent their waking hours working in agriculture, trying to acquire food. Whether or not one could eat on a particular day was a major source in insecurity. Poor weather often meant going to bed hungry... and extended poor weather could mean starvation ...

The <u>Protestant Work Ethic</u> created reliable patterns of behavior, which were so important for the development of a market system Capitalism and Puritanism fed off each other. Both developments placed responsibility on individual initiative; and both involved a clean break from the paternalistic and static feudal order of England. Both were highly destructive of hierarchy and empowered the individual to determine his own fate.

It certainly can be propositioned that these are the reasons the Plymouth Colony was so successful in enduring long term, versus the poor quality spiritual and civic values at the foundations of the ill-fated Jamestown Colony, a colony established in 1607, but which could not survive past the early 1700's. It is of interest that this writer wrote and made a presentation to this effect to a <u>Dallas, Texas chapter of the Daughters of the American</u> <u>Revolution</u> in 1997, and it subsequently was proclaimed the best program of the year among the DAR chapters in Texas that year.

These are the events and influences of our famous William Bradford, man of God, leader of the pilgrims. He is hailed by some historians as the Father of American History, due to his extensive and complete written journals of the life of the pilgrims in much of the 1600's. These writings are the most extensive of the relative few writings which exist today from that era of our history.

"It was not until 1793 that the name 'Pilgrims' was applied to them in general. In that year,

on the celebration of 'Forefathers Day' at Plymouth, the <u>Reverend Chandler Robbins</u>, who preached the sermon, used the term. He had gone through the church records and had found a copy of William Bradford's description of the departure from Leiden. Bradford told of the reluctance of 'the saints' to leave the city and then said, 'but they knew they were pilgrims and looked not much on those things, but lifted up their eyes to the heavens, their dearest country, and quieted their spirits.' In his sermon Robbins applied the name Pilgrims to the Forefathers and the name thus gained currency".(--Collier's Enclopedia.)

Source: http://www.avbtab.org/rc/pilgrims.htm

On November 16, 1621, The Papal Chancery first adopted January 1st as the beginning of the calendar year. Previously, March was the first month, which explains why our modern names for the 9th_12th months begin instead with prefixes meaning "7" (Sept_), "8" (Oct¬) "9" (Nov_)and "10" (Dec_).

The first income tax in American history was imposed in 1643 by the colonists of New Plymouth, Massachusetts. That was in the administration of Governor William Bradford. So, we must claim or admit that our ancestor initiated income tax in this new land.

Source: Richard Skenkman & Kurt Reiger, "One-Night Stands with American History," Perennial - Harper Collins Publishers, 2003, 10 East 53th Street, New York NY 10022, page 1.

Most people believe that Plymouth Colony was named by the Mayflower Pilgrims, because they had set sail from Plymouth, England. Such is not accurate. In 1614, Captain John Smith sailed from Jamestown, Virginia, on his first exploring mission to the northeast. He returned with a map cluttered with "barbarous" names representing Indian villages. Smith showed the map to Prince Charles and asked His Royal Highness to provide good English names in place of the Indian ones. Prince Charles obliged, and changed the Indian name of "Accomack" to "Plymouth," years before any white man settled there as a colony.

Source: "All the People Some of the Time" (Ann Arbor, Michigan, William L. Clements Library, 1941, page 8.

Governor William Bradford represents one of the most significant historical figures in American history. He was a man used by God in establishing a society that was based upon God-fearing ideals. The honor is high for our family to have a direct lineal relationship with this outstanding man of history.

Notes for Alice Carpenter:

Alice Bradford is my seventh great grandmother through her secondhusband, Governor William Bradford of Plymouth Colony. Thisdescendancy is on the side of my father's genealogical line. She also is my ninth great grand aunt.

Alice, widowed from Edward Southworth, came to the new colony in thesummer of 1623 on the sail ship "Anne." She came at the personalinvitation of William Bradford, the new Governor of the Colony. Hehad written after his wife had died. The acquaintance of William andAlice reached back to the Leiden group days in Holland when she andher first husband, Edward, were a part of that group. The marriage ifof Alice and William was the fourth marriage for Plymouth Colony.

Source:www.sail1620.org/discover_biography_the_carpenter_sisters_of_leiden.shtml

Alice represents a unique turning place in this family's genealogy, inthat she represents connections to two of the most significanthistorical documents in the world that deal with

government andfreedom.

Her first husband, Edward Southworth, is the 11th great grandson ofKing Edward I (Longshanks). Edward was the grandson in a trilogy ofthree generations of Kings (John of Lackland, Henry III and himself)who issued 17 known copies or versions of what became known as theMagna Carta. The significance of these documents is they laid out inwritten order the concepts that the king was not all powerful, but didneed to consult with the citizenry (the Barons in these cases) aboutcertain matters, and the beginning seeds of civil and human rightswere first expressed in a government level official document.

Now it must be remembered that the three Kings agreed to these thingsunder pressure from the Barons, and not because the Kings feltmagnanimous for the people's rights. Fifteen of the known copies of Magna Carta reside in various British institutions, one is inAustralia and one is in the United States, having formerly been theproperty of the Perot Foundation of Dallas, Texas. The foundation'soriginator, Mr. H. Ross Perot, Sr. is an acquaintance of mine and amember of the church where I labored on its staff for over twentyyears, Highland Park Presbyterian Church. The Magna Carta copy Mr.Perot has was issued by King Edward I and its significance is that itwas the only one of the 17 editions that actually found its way intolegislation in England. There are some 37 sections to that editionand 10 of them reportedly are still on the law books of England todayas originally composed. Mr. Perot gave me two sets of copies ofposters he'd made illustrating that copy of the Magna Carta and it isnicely framed and graces the walls of my home. Mr. Perot's foundationpurchased the Magna Carta in the early 1980's for about \$1.3 Millionand sold it in 2008 at auction to un undisclosed buyer for \$21.3million.

Alice's second husband, William Bradford, was a significant leader andman of God among the Mayflower Pilgrims. He and she are my eighthgreat grandparents. Though he was not educated formally, hisself-education was such to make him probably the most learned andliterate man among those 102 Mayflower passengers. The men amongthose passengers signed what was called the Mayflower Compact shortlyafter arriving at the new land, but prior to setting foot on the newland. It was a document to outline a system of self government bywhich these people would live in freedom, in God's grace, but wouldhave an understood order of authority from the citizens necessary fortheir new society to prosper. It had expressions of civil and humanrights. This was the first such document in the New World to affirmthese concepts in writing. Though it is not reported exactly whocomposed that document (it presumably was a document of expressionfrom them all) I think it is fairly obvious that Bradford was aco-author, if not the principle author of its composition. After all,no one knows where the original copy disappeared, but the only reasonwe have the words captured today is that Bradford, in his writing ofthe history of the Plymouth Colony, cited the words which obviouslywere familiar to hi

So, we can be thankful for the experience of being related to Alice, awoman whose two marriages brought together family lines of highprofile men in history who were associated with two differentdocuments which represent the very fundamentals of freedom and allthat we as Americans hold dear for our self governance.

161 Thomas Richard

4.

- John Bishop was born in 1625 in Guilford, New Haven County, Connecticut. He died in Oct
 1683 in Guilford, New Haven County, Connecticut. He married Susannah Coldman on Dec 13, 1650 in Guilford, New Haven County, Connecticut.
- 163 Susannah Coldman was born about 1625 in England. She died on Nov 01, 1703 in
 3. Guilford, New Haven County, Connecticut.

Notes for Susannah Coldman:

Susannah Coldman and her husband, John Bishiop, are the sixth greatgrandparents of United States President Ronald Wilson Reagan. Theyare my seventh great grandparents, once removed.

- 163 **Obadiah Spencer** (son of Thomas Spencer and Ann Derifield) was born about 1639 in
 6. Hartford, Hartford County, Connecticut. He died in May 1712 in Hartford, Hartford County, Connecticut. He married **Mary Disborough** (daughter of Nicholas Disborough and Mary Bronson) in 1665 in Hartford, Hartford County, Connecticut.
- Mary Disborough (daughter of Nicholas Disborough and Mary Bronson) was born in 1641
 in Hartford, Hartford County, Connecticut. She died about 1711 in Hartford, Hartford County, Connecticut.
- John Beckley was born on Mar 06, 1642. He died on Apr 08, 1696. He married HannaDeming.
- 163 **Hanna Deming** was born on Oct 16, 1656. She died in 1701.
- 9.
- William King (son of Robert King and Elizabeth Brooke) was born about 1659 in
 Westmoreland County, Virginia. He died before May 22, 1702 in Stafford County, Virginiia. He married Judith Peyton.
- 168 **Judith Peyton** was born in 1662 in Nominy, Westmoreland County, Virginia.
- 1.
- Marvel Moseley was born about 1653. He died on Feb 13, 1721. He married SarahBlaise.
- Sarah Blaise (daughter of William Blaise) was born about 1664 in Middlesex, Virginia. She died on Oct 09, 1716 in Middlesex, Virginia.
- 170 David Davis He married Mary.
- 6.
- 170 **Mary**

7.

- 170 Thomas Hodges (son of William Hodges and Charity Ramsey) was born in 1680. He died in
 8. 1750 in Goochland, Virginia. He married Christian Woodson.
- 170 **Christian Woodson** was born in 1683. She died in 1717.
- 9.
- 171 **John Walker** was born in 1678. He died in 1767.
- 0.
- 192 Dannett Abney (son of George Abney and Bathusa Sleaton) was born on Feb 26, 1659 in
 0. Leichester, England. He died on Mar 05, 1732 in Charlottsville, Virginia. He married an unknown spouse about 1702.

Generation 12

256 **Richard Nason** (son of John Nason and Eliza) was born about 1645 in England.

0.

- Martyn Kellogg (son of Phillippe Kellogg and Annie Annis Minot) was born on Nov 15, 1595
 in Great Leighs, Essex, England. He died in 1671 in Braintree, Essex, England. He married Prudence Bird (daughter of John Bird) on Oct 22, 1621 in Saint Michael's, Bishops Stortford, Hertfordshire, England.
- 320 **Prudence Bird** (daughter of John Bird) was born on Nov 23, 1596 in Bishop's Stor, Herford,
 1. England. She died before May 20, 1671 in Great Leighs, Essex, England.

Notes for Prudence Bird:

Prudence was born the same year that English navigator Sir FrancisDrake died off the coast of Panama.

Source:http://www.sirfrancisdrakehistory.net/

- John Webster (son of Matthew Webster and Elizabeth Ashton) was born on Aug 16, 1590
 in Cossington, Leicestershire County, England. He died on Apr 05, 1661 in Hadley, Hampshire County, Massachuetts. He married Agnus Smith on Nov 07, 1609 in Cossington, Leicestershire County, England.
- 320 Agnus Smith was born in 1585. She died in 1667 in Hartford, Hartford County, Connecticut.

9.

Notes for John Webster:

This American from England is the fifth Governor of the of the Colony of Connecticut. The Connecticut State Library has posted a biography on the Internet of the Governor at this source:

http://www.cslib.org/gov/websterj.htm

"John Webster was born on August 16, 1590 in Cossington, Leicestershire, England to Matthew and Elizabeth (Ashton) Webster. His was a family of some substance. On November 7, 1609, he and AgnesSmith were married at Cossington. They had five children by the time they immigrated to New England, and had two more after they arrived.

"John Webster and his family settled in Watertown, Massachusetts in the early 1630s and moved to Hartford in 1636, probably with Thomas Hooker's group, which left Newtown, Massachusetts in April 1636. He was one of the original landholders of Hartford, was a member of the committee that sat with the Court of Magistrates of the Colony of Connecticut in 1637 and 1638, and became an Assistant to the GeneralCourt of the Colony of Connecticut in 1639. As an Assistant, he was one of a small group of men who were second in power only to the Governor, Deputy Governor, and General Court of Magistrates. He traveled to towns in Connecticut as a judge, helped create criminal laws for the colony, settled land and boundary disputes, helped theNew England Congress supply Connecticut towns with soldiers and ammunition for an expedition against the Indians, and surveyed the highway from Hartford to Windsor. He was a Commissioner to the UnitedColonies of New England in 1654.

"The Colony of Connecticut elected him as Deputy Governor in 1655, with Thomas Welles as Governor. The next year, 1656, John Webster was elected as Governor. Elections were annual, and prior to 1659 it was believed that no person should serve a term of more than one year. In1657 John Winthrop was elected as governor, with Thomas Welles as Deputy Governor and John Webster as Chief Magistrate.

"John Webster was one of the leading members of the First Congregational Church of Hartford, whose minister, the Rev. Thomas Hooker, was the dynamic leader of the first settlers that came to Hartford. When Hooker died in 1647, a controversy arose as to who should become his successor. The Rev. Samuel Stone, Hooker's assistant, was supported by a majority of the church members. However, Rev. Stone wanted to change some aspects of church procedures, including liberalizing the eligibility requirements for infant baptism and admission to communion, while limiting the autonomy of each congregation. A significant number of the parishioners disagreed with Stone and wanted Michael Wigglesworth as Rev. Hooker's successor. A religious dispute arose, and the congregation became split. Church and state were not separate at that time, so this became a political as well as a spiritual crisis for Hartford.

"The dissenting group, of which John Webster was a prominent member, wanted to withdraw from the Hartford church and move to Massachusetts, but Rev. Stone and his followers would not release them from their church covenant. The dissenters attempted to get other CongregationalChurches in nearby towns to accept them, but none would. The principles disputed in Hartford were introduced in the General Assembly as the Half-Way Covenant in August 1657 and became points of conflict for Congregational Churches throughout New England for over a decade. A key provision allowed Congregational churches to baptize children of parents who had themselves been baptized but who had never professed conversion and had consequently never been fully admitted to the Church. The Half-Way Covenant was approved by a New England church synod in 1662 and finally passed by the Connecticut legislature in May 1669. On February 12, 1669/70 some members of the First Church of Hartford left to form the Second Church.

"Meanwhile, on April 18, 1659, through the arbitration of some Massachusetts Congregational Church leaders, many of the initial dissenters and Rev. Stone's faction signed an agreement for the former group to move to Massachusetts. The Hadley Company, as it was known, left Hartford shortly after that, with John Webster as one of its leaders. He was given the responsibility of laying out the roads for the company. He and his family went first to Northhampton, Massachusetts, and later to Hadley, where he was made a magistrate in May 1660. He died there, of a fever, on April 5, 1661 and is buried in Hadley. His wife Agnes died in Hartford in 1667. His most famous descendant was Noah Webster, who was born in Hartford in 1758 and who died May 28, 1843 in New Haven.

"John Webster's home lot in Hartford, Connecticut was on the east side of what became Governor Street (the present Popieluszko Court)."

Source:http://www.cslib.org/gov/websterj.htm

Perhaps the descendant of most note from Gov. John Webster would be his third great grandson, Mr. Noah Webster, the famous lexographer who produced in 1828 the well known Webster's Dictionary.

- Richard Treat was born on Aug 28, 1584 in Pitminster, Somerset, England. He died in
 1669 in Wethersfield County, Hartford, Connecticut. He married Elizabeth.
- 321 Elizabeth
- 1.
- John Hopkins (son of Stephen Hopkins and Constance Dudley) was born in 1614 in St.
 Stephens, London County, London, England. He died on Apr 14, 1654 in Hartford, Hartford County, Connecticut. He married Jane Strong.
- Jane Strong was born in 1615 in Chartstock, Dorset County, England. She died on Nov 11,
 1679 in Hartford, Hartford County, Connecticut.
- William "The father of American History" Bradford (son of William Bradford and Alice
 Hanson) was born on Mar 15, 1590 in Austerfield, Yorkshire County, England. He died on May 09, 1657 in Plymouth, Massachusetts. He married Alice Carpenter (daughter of

Alexander Carpenter and Priscilla Dillen) on Aug 14, 1623 in Plymouth, Massachusetts.

Alice Carpenter (daughter of Alexander Carpenter and Priscilla Dillen) was born on Aug 03,
1. 1590 in Wrington, Sommersetshire, England. She died on Mar 26, 1670 in Plymouth Colony.

Notes for William "The father of American History" Bradford: William Bradford, whose fame came as being Governor of Plymouth Colony during its early decades, is my seventh great grandfather on my father's side of the family. William's birthday is reported March 19, 1590, though other dates have been cited.

William Bradford's father died in 1591 when the son was only a year old. William then went to live with his grandfather, William Bradford, until the grandfather died in 1596. Then, young William went to live with his Uncle Robert Bradford, who resided in the little village of Scrooby, a place five miles from Austerfield, near the estate of the Brewsters, in Nottinghamshire. He joined the church where Rev. Richard Clifton and <u>Rev. John Robinson</u> preached, and was soon numbered among the "<u>Separatists</u>," becoming a leader among them.

His educational opportunities were meager, but he applied self-learning, eventually becoming proficient in Dutch, Latin, French and Greek, along with some study of Hebrew, as he had a curiosity to read the Holy Scripture in its original languages. Obviously, his first language was English. Having workable knowledge of six languages in that day was quite an accomplishment.

William Bradford lived in a turbulent time for England. A Church of England, broken away from Rome, but, headed by the likes of <u>King James I</u>, was not what many Christians wanted, and there arose two groups of objectors known as Puritans and as Separatists. Puritans sought to "purify" the <u>Church of England</u>, so they were not openly "rebellious" to the Church. On the other hand, the Separatists thought the Church of England beyond reform, and thus advocated a "separate" church.

The Rev. John Robinson at <u>Scrooby in Nottinghamshire</u> led this Separatist congregation. The congregation was formed in 1602. They met in the manor home of <u>Postmaster William</u> <u>Brewster</u>. They sought only to worship in their own way. They were peaceful and not confrontational to the Church of England authorities.

The believers in Scrooby were called <u>Brownists</u>, a derisive term in the minds of Church of England leaders, named after Robert Brown, a graduate of <u>Cambridge University</u> who was a catalyst for Protestant dissent in England in the late 1500's. Robinson was likened to Brown in his views. The Puritans were viewed as less threatening, as they had church buildings and could be found, if authorities wished to arrest them. The Separatists or Brownists met in homes and, therefore, had no church buildings.

A Scrooby resident, though not a Brownists congregation member, was our William Bradford. He, being destined to become the governor of Plymouth Colony, wrote of the Brownists's oppressive situation...

"They were both scoffed and scorned by the profane multitude ... and the poor people were so vexed with apparitors, and pusurants and commissarie counts, as truly their affliction was not small."

He also wrote some opposition to the positions taken by the Brownists. Bradford was not only a gifted writer, publishing his famous and moving diary, "A History of Plymouth Plantation," he would also become one of the heroic pioneers of Western history, laying the cornerstones that made possible the building of the American Republic.

However, in Scrooby, William Bradford was just another Christian Citizen. He was a mere teenager when he arrived at Scrooby, son of a farmer. But his potential to be a leader was

great, a Governor and a writer. His writings are credited with coining the term of "Pilgrims" to apply to these Christians who fared the Atlantic winter waters to seek freedom of worship and of pursuing life, unfettered by the shackles seen in the structures prevailing in England.

The Separatists came under persecution by the English government, since it was the Church of England, government-owned and sponsored, from which the group wanted separation. King James viewed them as rebels. In 1607, the people comprising the church at Scrooby made the decision to relocate to <u>Amsterdam</u>, a place where much religious tolerance was practiced. However, the harassment from the English government, including imprisonment of some of the members, including William Brester, delayed them in completing the move till 1608. This was a time when the Netherlands was enjoying its height of commercial shipping success around the then known world, and Amsterdam was considered probably the commercial capital of the world.

There were many Protestant churches in Amsterdam, due to the tolerance, but there was a lot of wrangling amongst themselves, and so the group from Scrooby relocated shortly to <u>Leiden</u>, a little south, along the coast, toward <u>The Hague</u>. In Leiden, they settled down to their various occupations. William Brewster became a publisher of books. Rev. John Robinson taught at the university. Many of these Christians worked in the clothing trades. Isaac Allerton was a tailor. William Bradford and William Pontus were fustian makers. Fustian was a coarse, heavy cloth made of cotton and flax, and it was used for clothing in Europe through the Middle Ages. Its thickness was similar to corduroy or velveteen. It is twilled and has a short pile or nap. So, our William Bradford was a man of the cloth, but he was not a Man of the Cloth, in the senses of the ordained ministry!

Even though freedom was good in Leiden, compared to England, being there was hard. They were not citizens, and so their employment opportunities were bottom-of-the barrel quality. The had jobs where work hours were very long and lowly paid. In addition, their youth seemed overly influenced by the great licentiousness of the youth native to that country, representing manifold temptations and much that was considered evil. So, after some 11 or 12 years in Leiden, the group decided to seek another place to live. They checked into the situation in England in 1620 to seek a solution.

Englishmen had begun to poke around the new world in the early 1600's. Our friends in Leiden followed the news about these developments with increasing interest. In 1607, Jamestown had become the first permanent English settlement. It's ironic that it is proclaimed in history as the first permanent English settlement, because it dissipated into nothingness by shortly after 1700, due to its impractical and inhospitable conditions. Williamsburg and other places flourished later. However, <u>Capt. John Smith</u>, who was a leader with the Jamestown settlement, explored further north and made a detailed map in 1616 all the way up to what became known as New England. It was probably due to Smith's writings that the Leiden Separatists knew of the area and it is quite probable that they had copies of his maps when they made the trip to sail to the New World.

It is recorded that Capt. Smith had offered his services to captain a ship for the Leiden group to the New World, but they declined his offer, allegedly because he was highly priced. They chose an English solder who'd been living in Holland, named <u>Myles Standish</u>. The English Separatists were cautious of Smith's reputation as a swashbuckling braggadocio, which is probably the reason why they declined his services, but he wrote that they turned him down because of his cost.

Not all the Separatists in Leiden came in 1620. In fact, a majority of them remained in Leiden, some coming in a year or two later, others coming several years later, and some stayed, including their pastor, Rev. John Robinson, who stayed till his death March 1, 1624.

The group set sail August 5, 1620, from Delfshaven, South Holland, on the Speedwell with about 120 passengers, but that ship's springing a leak and other forms of inadequacy forced a return, putting in at nearby Plymouth, England. They reloaded onto the Mayflower for their effective launch to the New World. They continued with only 102 passengers, as

some chose to stay in England, foregoing the challenge and the fear of the unknown, settling for the known, displeasing as it was. On November 22, they sighted land, what we later know as Cape Cod. "They had begun their long journey on the dock at Delfshaven to ask God's blessing; they ended it on the sands of Cape Cod, kneeling to thank Him for that blessing."

The Mayflower Compact, was written November 22, 1620 [This was November 11, old style calendar] off the Coast of what was to become Massachusetts. This is the first written agreement for self-government in America. It was signed on the Mayflower, before landing at what became Plymouth Colony. There were 41 adult males who signed the document. Of the 102 passengers, 37 were members of the "Separatists" who were fleeing religious persecution in Europe. Half the colony failed to survive the first winter, but the remainder lived on and prospered. One of the signers was William Bradford, whom some historians have called the Father of American History. He basically was self-educated.

The document was an expression of all the group. However, most likely, it was primarily composed by one writer who, no doubt, received editorial suggestions prior to the mass signing. The composer is never identified, but William Bradford's seemingly being the most literate man among the signers, was most likely the composer. Another reason giving credibility that Bradford composed the Mayflower Compact is that no copy of the original document survives. The only reason we have the words of the Mayflower Compact is that Bradford quoted the document in its entirety in his historical writing of the times. His ability to recollect the complete words gives credence to the idea that he originated the document for the most part.

Listen to the stirring words of this compact:

The Mayflower Compact

"In the name of God, Amen. We, whose names are underwritten, the Loyal Subjects of our dread Sovereign Lord, King James, by the Grace of God, of England, France and Ireland, King, Defender of the Faith.

"Having undertaken for the Glory of God, and Advancement of the Christian Faith, and the Honour of our King and Country, a voyage to plant the first colony in the northern parts of Virginia; do by these presents, solemnly and mutually in the Presence of God and one of another, covenant and combine ourselves together into a civil Body Politick, for our better Ordering and Preservation, and Furtherance of the Ends aforesaid; And by Virtue hereof to enact, constitute, and frame, such just and equal Laws, Ordinances, Acts, Constitutions and Offices, from time to time, as shall be thought most meet and convenient for the General good of the Colony; unto which we promise all due submission and obedience.

"In Witness whereof we have hereunto subscribed our names at Cape Cod the eleventh of November, in the Reign of our Sovereign Lord, King James of England, France and Ireland, the eighteenth, and of Scotland the fifty-fourth. Anno Domini, 1620."

Are not these words compelling as to Christian purpose? Although no one is quite sure what happened to the original copy of the Mayflower Compact, the world is fortunate enough to know what it said, because of the prudent gesture of Governor William Bradford to make a handwritten copy.

Early tragedy hit on December 9, 1620 when Bradford's wife, Dorthea May Bradford, drowned overboard before the band of Pilgrims had embarked upon the land. It was early in the dawn hours, and no one witnessed the fall. The cause of the fall was never determined.

There were only 23 family units to survive that cold winter after arriving November 21, 1620 in what is now <u>Provincetown Harbor</u>. It was not until December 26 that they selected Plymouth on <u>Cape Cod</u> to establish their living quarters. That was less than 50 people by then. However, in 2018, it can be estimated that some 25+ million of our country's estimated 325 million population probably are descended from that original group of 102 Englanders. Most of them were members of the Separatists religious movement in England, which objected to the Roman Catholic likeness of the Church of England.

These Pilgrims had a serious and purposeful dedication to following the ways of God... it is even viewed by some writers that the Pilgrims believed they were establishing the closest thing to God's Kingdom on earth as may be possible. After such was their thirst for advancement and establishment.

These Pilgrims were a mere handful of Light-bearers, on the edge of a vast and Dark Continent. But the Light of Jesus Christ was penetrating further into the heart of America. William Bradford would write with remarkable discernment. "As one small candle may light a thousand, so the light kindled here has shown unto many, yea in some sort to our whole nation . . . We have noted these things so that you might see their worth and not negligently lose what your fathers have obtained with so much hardship."

In the first few days ashore, they were approached by a native American who greeted them with "Welcome Englishmen."

This was quite a surprise to them. However, this Indian native, <u>Samoset</u> by name, had been captured by earlier voyagers and taken to show off in Spain and England for a couple of years, thus his learning English. He'd been returned to his homeland, as probably thought hopelessly untrainable for living in European culture. However, Samoset became a significant communication asset for the Pilgrims.

In April 1621, Bradford succeeded Governor John Carver, who died, as chief executive of Plymouth Colony. Except for five years, Bradford served as governor almost continuously from 1621 through 1656, having been reelected in 30 of the annual election times. In 1621, he negotiated a treaty with <u>Massasoit, the chief</u> of the <u>Wampanoag Indians</u>. Under the treaty, which was vital to the maintenance and growth of the colony, Massasoit disavowed Indian claims to the Plymouth area and pledged peace with the colonists.

Massasoit's problem was that his tribe had been about 30,000, but a pestilence had reduced their number to about 300. He feared being taken over by another Indian tribe. He wisely realized that developing the friendship with the Pilgrims, who had muskets and some military expertise, would be an ally to protect his tribe. That proved correct, and there never was any Indian conflicts during Bradford's life time, except for a few attacks by Captain Miles Standish that were punishment to some Indians who were competitors to Massascoit's tribe.

Bradford was a delegate on four occasions to the <u>New England Confederation</u>, of which he was twice elected president. His History of Plymouth Plantation (1656) is the primary source of information about the pilgrims.

It was the fall of 1621 when this vigorous band of survivors from that first terrible fatal winter first celebrated what we have come to know as a festival of Thanksgiving. Gov. Bradford called for the occasion, and the only two sets of recorded words do we have describing the first Plymouth Thanksgiving come from Edward Winslow and Gov. Bradford:

"Our harvest being gottin in, our Governour sent foure men on fowling,that so we might after a more special manner rejoyce together, after we had gathered the fruit of our labours; they foure in one day killed as much fowle, as with a little helpe beside, served the Company almost a weeke, at which time amongst other Recreations, we exercised our Armes, many of the Indians coming amongst us, and amongst the rest their greatest King Massasoyt, with some nintie men, whom for three dayes we entertained and feasted, and they went out and filled five Deere, which they brought to the Plantation and bestowed on our Governour, and upon the Captaine, and others. And although it be not alwayes so plentifull, as it was at this time with us, yet by the goodnesse of God, we are so farre from want, that we often wish you partakers of our plentie." (W. De D. Love, "Fast & Thanksgiving Days in New England, " Winslow's words, 1895).

and

"They began now to gather in the small harvest they had, and to fit up their houses and dwellings against winter, being all well recovered in health and strength and had all things in good plenty. For as some were thus employed in affairs abroad, others were exercised in fishing, about cod and bass and other fish, of which they took good store, of which every family had their portion. All the summer there was no want; and now began to come in store of fowl, as winter approached, of which this place did abound when they came first (but afterward decreased by degrees). And besides waterfowl, there was great store of wild turkeys, of which they took many, besides venison, etc. Besides, they had about a peck of meal a week to a person, or now since harvest, Indian corn to that proportion. Which made many afterwards write so largely of their plenty here to their friends in England, which were not feigned but true reports."

(http://www.pilgrimhall.org/1stthnks.htm, Gov. Bradford's words).

What has come down in American tradition as the "First Thanksgiving" was a harvest festival. In the spring of 1621, the colonists planted their first crops in <u>Patuxet's</u> abandoned fields. While they had limited success with wheat and barley, their corn crop proved very successful, thanks to Squanto who taught them how to plant corn in hills, using fish as a fertilizer.

In October of 1621, the Pilgrims celebrated their first harvest with feasting and games, as was the custom in England, as well as with prayer. The celebration served to boost the morale of the 50 remaining colonists, and also to impress their allies. Among the Native People attending were Massasoit and 90 Wampanoag men.

Source for preceding two paragraphs: http://www.pilgrimhall.org/f_thanks.htm

Continuing with the earlier quoted source:

An aside note is appropriate at this point, to recognize that this Thanksgiving celebration possibly was not the first Thanksgiving celebration to take place on ground that ultimately became the United States. The first one supposedly happened on April 28, 1598, twenty-two years earlier than the Plymouth Colony celebration.

That first Thanksgiving was a group of Spaniards, led by the Spanish explorer, <u>Juan de</u> <u>Onate</u>, that feasted on the river banks of the Rio Grande after arriving near what now is El Paso, Texas. They had just made it through a 350-mile trek from Santa Barbara, Mexico, across the <u>Chihauhuan Desert</u>, so they had plenty to celebrate. In 1990, the Texas Legislature passed a resolution recognizing <u>San Elizario, Texas</u>, on the outskirts of <u>El Paso</u>, as the site of the first true Thanksgiving. It is also of interest to note that my great uncle, <u>Alfred (Fred) Lansing Sharpe</u>, established a ranch close to San Elizario about 1899, and he was elected a Texas Representative from that area in 1904. Records do not survive today at that county courthouse to determine property locations of ranches, but possibly my great uncle's ranch land was land on which this first Thanksgiving took place.

Source: "Texas Curiosities" by John Kelso, The Globe Pequot Press, Builford, Connecticut, 2000, page 160.

A study of Bradford's writings and other research into the operation of the Plymouth Colony emphasizes that community's commitment was to Christian ideals in service and in work ethic. They not only propagated with many children per household, but they propagated their religious and work ethic in ways which resulted in Plymouth's prosperity and vigor. And even though today's Plymouth is mostly a thriving tourist town, it does anchor the culture and the being of the New World by those who would choose to come as God's children and for His honor and Glory.

One quotation of Bradford is cited in his "History of Plymouth Planation" (Boston, Little, Brown & Company, 1856, page 24):

"Lastly (and which was not least), a great hope and inward zeal the (the Pilgrims) had of laying some good foundations (or at least to make some way thereunto) for the propagating and advancing of the Gospel of the Kingdom of Christ in those remote parts of the world, yea, though they should be but even as stepping-stones unto others fort the performing of so great a work."

But, what about the Protestant spirit of capitalism? Benjamin Hart in his book said that the Puritan's contribution to America's political institutions (included): written constitutions, separation of powers, regular elections, the secret ballot, the federalist principle, religious toleration and separation of church and state. But there is also a strong connection between the rise of Puritanism and the emergence of capitalism.

To appreciate fully that fact, it is worth reflecting briefly on conditions in Europe prior to the economic revolution, which began to take place following the <u>Protestant Reformation</u>. Living standards for most people in medieval Europe were poor. About 90% of the people spent their waking hours working in agriculture, trying to acquire food. Whether or not one could eat on a particular day was a major source in insecurity. Poor weather often meant going to bed hungry... and extended poor weather could mean starvation ...

The <u>Protestant Work Ethic</u> created reliable patterns of behavior, which were so important for the development of a market system Capitalism and Puritanism fed off each other. Both developments placed responsibility on individual initiative; and both involved a clean break from the paternalistic and static feudal order of England. Both were highly destructive of hierarchy and empowered the individual to determine his own fate.

It certainly can be propositioned that these are the reasons the Plymouth Colony was so successful in enduring long term, versus the poor quality spiritual and civic values at the foundations of the ill-fated Jamestown Colony, a colony established in 1607, but which could not survive past the early 1700's. It is of interest that this writer wrote and made a presentation to this effect to a <u>Dallas, Texas chapter of the Daughters of the American</u> <u>Revolution</u> in 1997, and it subsequently was proclaimed the best program of the year among the DAR chapters in Texas that year.

These are the events and influences of our famous William Bradford, man of God, leader of the pilgrims. He is hailed by some historians as the Father of American History, due to his extensive and complete written journals of the life of the pilgrims in much of the 1600's. These writings are the most extensive of the relative few writings which exist today from that era of our history.

"It was not until 1793 that the name 'Pilgrims' was applied to them in general. In that year,

on the celebration of 'Forefathers Day' at Plymouth, the <u>Reverend Chandler Robbins</u>, who preached the sermon, used the term. He had gone through the church records and had found a copy of William Bradford's description of the departure from Leiden. Bradford told of the reluctance of 'the saints' to leave the city and then said, 'but they knew they were pilgrims and looked not much on those things, but lifted up their eyes to the heavens, their dearest country, and quieted their spirits.' In his sermon Robbins applied the name Pilgrims to the Forefathers and the name thus gained currency".(--Collier's Enclopedia.)

Source: http://www.avbtab.org/rc/pilgrims.htm

On November 16, 1621, The Papal Chancery first adopted January 1st as the beginning of the calendar year. Previously, March was the first month, which explains why our modern names for the 9th_12th months begin instead with prefixes meaning "7" (Sept_), "8" (Oct¬) "9" (Nov_)and "10" (Dec_).

The first income tax in American history was imposed in 1643 by the colonists of New Plymouth, Massachusetts. That was in the administration of Governor William Bradford. So, we must claim or admit that our ancestor initiated income tax in this new land.

Source: Richard Skenkman & Kurt Reiger, "One-Night Stands with American History," Perennial - Harper Collins Publishers, 2003, 10 East 53th Street, New York NY 10022, page 1.

Most people believe that Plymouth Colony was named by the Mayflower Pilgrims, because they had set sail from Plymouth, England. Such is not accurate. In 1614, Captain John Smith sailed from Jamestown, Virginia, on his first exploring mission to the northeast. He returned with a map cluttered with "barbarous" names representing Indian villages. Smith showed the map to Prince Charles and asked His Royal Highness to provide good English names in place of the Indian ones. Prince Charles obliged, and changed the Indian name of "Accomack" to "Plymouth," years before any white man settled there as a colony.

Source: "All the People Some of the Time" (Ann Arbor, Michigan, William L. Clements Library, 1941, page 8.

Governor William Bradford represents one of the most significant historical figures in American history. He was a man used by God in establishing a society that was based upon God-fearing ideals. The honor is high for our family to have a direct lineal relationship with this outstanding man of history.

Notes for Alice Carpenter:

Alice Bradford is my seventh great grandmother through her secondhusband, Governor William Bradford of Plymouth Colony. Thisdescendancy is on the side of my father's genealogical line. She also is my ninth great grand aunt.

Alice, widowed from Edward Southworth, came to the new colony in thesummer of 1623 on the sail ship "Anne." She came at the personalinvitation of William Bradford, the new Governor of the Colony. Hehad written after his wife had died. The acquaintance of William andAlice reached back to the Leiden group days in Holland when she andher first husband, Edward, were a part of that group. The marriage ifof Alice and William was the fourth marriage for Plymouth Colony.

Source:www.sail1620.org/discover_biography_the_carpenter_sisters_of_leiden.shtml

Alice represents a unique turning place in this family's genealogy, inthat she represents connections to two of the most significanthistorical documents in the world that deal with

government andfreedom.

Her first husband, Edward Southworth, is the 11th great grandson ofKing Edward I (Longshanks). Edward was the grandson in a trilogy ofthree generations of Kings (John of Lackland, Henry III and himself)who issued 17 known copies or versions of what became known as theMagna Carta. The significance of these documents is they laid out inwritten order the concepts that the king was not all powerful, but didneed to consult with the citizenry (the Barons in these cases) aboutcertain matters, and the beginning seeds of civil and human rightswere first expressed in a government level official document.

Now it must be remembered that the three Kings agreed to these thingsunder pressure from the Barons, and not because the Kings feltmagnanimous for the people's rights. Fifteen of the known copies of Magna Carta reside in various British institutions, one is inAustralia and one is in the United States, having formerly been theproperty of the Perot Foundation of Dallas, Texas. The foundation'soriginator, Mr. H. Ross Perot, Sr. is an acquaintance of mine and amember of the church where I labored on its staff for over twentyyears, Highland Park Presbyterian Church. The Magna Carta copy Mr.Perot has was issued by King Edward I and its significance is that itwas the only one of the 17 editions that actually found its way intolegislation in England. There are some 37 sections to that editionand 10 of them reportedly are still on the law books of England todayas originally composed. Mr. Perot gave me two sets of copies ofposters he'd made illustrating that copy of the Magna Carta and it isnicely framed and graces the walls of my home. Mr. Perot's foundationpurchased the Magna Carta in the early 1980's for about \$1.3 Millionand sold it in 2008 at auction to un undisclosed buyer for \$21.3million.

Alice's second husband, William Bradford, was a significant leader andman of God among the Mayflower Pilgrims. He and she are my eighthgreat grandparents. Though he was not educated formally, hisself-education was such to make him probably the most learned andliterate man among those 102 Mayflower passengers. The men amongthose passengers signed what was called the Mayflower Compact shortlyafter arriving at the new land, but prior to setting foot on the newland. It was a document to outline a system of self government bywhich these people would live in freedom, in God's grace, but wouldhave an understood order of authority from the citizens necessary fortheir new society to prosper. It had expressions of civil and humanrights. This was the first such document in the New World to affirmthese concepts in writing. Though it is not reported exactly whocomposed that document (it presumably was a document of expressionfrom them all) I think it is fairly obvious that Bradford was aco-author, if not the principle author of its composition. After all,no one knows where the original copy disappeared, but the only reasonwe have the words captured today is that Bradford, in his writing ofthe history of the Plymouth Colony, cited the words which obviouslywere familiar to hi

So, we can be thankful for the experience of being related to Alice, awoman whose two marriages brought together family lines of highprofile men in history who were associated with two differentdocuments which represent the very fundamentals of freedom and allthat we as Americans hold dear for our self governance.

322 Thomas Richard

2.

- William Bradford (son of William Bradford and Alice Morton) was born about 1559 in
 Austerfield, Yorkshire County, England. He died on Jul 15, 1591 in Austerfield, Yorkshire County, England. He married Alice Hanson (daughter of John Hanson) on Jun 21, 1584 in Austerfield, Yorkshire County, England.
- 322 Alice Hanson (daughter of John Hanson) was born on Dec 18, 1562 in Austerfield,
- 5. Yorkshire County, England. She died on May 23, 1597 in Austerfield, Yorkshire County, England.

Notes for William Bradford:

William fathered his son, William, by a wife whose name is uncertain.We show the name of Alice Hanson as William's wife, but at least onegenealogical reporter indicates Alice is a second wife.(www.journeyback.com/DUNHAM/fam01532.htm). However, he is treated inthis report as if he had only one marriage.

He died when his last child, William (future Govenor of the PlymouthColony) was only two years old.

Notes for Alice Hanson:

On October 19, 1562, the year of Alice's birth, there was the birth ofGeorge Abbot, Archbishop of Canterbury. A recognized leader of theEnglish Calvinists, Abbot also demonstrated Puritan sympathies, andtook a leading part in translating the 1611 King James Version of theBible.

Source:http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/George_Abbot_(Archbishop_of_Canterbury)

Alexander Carpenter (son of William O. Carpenter and Abigail) was born about 1560 in
Wrington, Somersetshire, England. He died in 1612. He married Priscilla Dillen before 1583.

322 **Priscilla Dillen** 7.

Notes for Alexander Carpenter:

Alexander Carpenter was from Wrington, Somersetshire, England. Hereis a picture of Alexander's family through the channel of hisdaughters.

The Carpenter sisters were the daughters of Alexander Carpenter.Alexander and his family were members of John Robinson's congregationwho moved to Leiden. Three of Alexander's daughters married in Leiden.One of these married daughters died without children but the remainingfour immigrated to Plymouth after 1620 and occupied important positions in the civic life in Plymouth.

Juliana married George Morton, in Leiden in July 1612. Juliana andGeorge and their children arrived in Plymouth in 1623 probably aboardthe Anne. Morton was one of the authors Mourt's Relation the firstaccount of life in Plymouth written to entice Englishmen to settle inPlymouth. George Morton died in 1624 and Juliana married ManassehKempton but had no children by him. In the 1627 cattle division,Juliana, Manasseh, and her children by Morton (Nathaniel, John,Ephraim and Patience) were listed in Bradford's company. Juliana'soldest son Nathaniel was born in Leiden in 1613. In 1647 Nathanielbecame clerk of the Plymouth court, a position he held until his deathin 1685. Throughout his life, Nathaniel held strong opinions thatinfluenced civic life in Plymouth. Juliana died in 1664/5 andNathaniel died in 1685.

After the death of her father Alexander, Mary Carpenter cared of hermother in Leiden. After she died, William and Alice (Carpenter)Bradford wrote to Mary in 1645 asking her to come to Plymouth to livewith them. Mary immigrated to Plymouth but never married.

Alice Carpenter married Edward Southworth in Leiden in 1613. Edwarddied before 1620. After the death of his wife in 1620, WilliamBradford wrote to Alice inviting her to come to Plymouth. She arrivedon the Anne in June 1623 and married Bradford in August 1623. Alice'stwo sons by Southworth, Constant (b 1614/6) and Thomas (b 1616/20),moved to Plymouth in ca 1628 to live in Bradford's home. Three sonswere born to Alice and William Bradford: William, Mercy and Joseph.William later served as assistant to his father.

Agnes married the widower Dr. Samuel Fuller in Leiden in April 1613. They had no children.

She died sometime before 1617 and Samuel Fullermarried Bridget Lee in Leiden in 1617. Bridget arrived in America in1623 aboard the Anne. Fuller was a signer of the Mayflower Compact andserved the colony as surgeon, physician and church deacon. Bridget wasthe colony's midwife and thought to be a deaconess as well. Fullerdied in Plymouth before the cattle division in 1627.

Priscilla arrived in Plymouth after the cattle division of 1627. Shemarried William Wright in Plymouth after 1627 but before 1633. Williamarrived in Plymouth on the Fortune in 1621 and assumed leading rolesin Plymouth affairs but unfortunately died in 1633. Priscilla marriedJohn Cooper in 1634. John Cooper's sisters, Ann and Lydia Cooper, married Ephraim and Nathaniel Morton. John and Priscilla moved toScituate where he was constable in 1639. They later moved toBarnstable where he was a deputy in 1642. John's will is dated in1676.

- Thomas Spencer (son of Gerald Spencer and Alice Whitbread) was born on Mar 29, 1607
 in Stotford, Bedfordshire, England. He died on Sep 11, 1687 in Hartford, Hartford County, Connecticut. He married Ann Derifield on Sep 11, 1645 in Stotford, Bedfordshire, England.
- Ann Derifield was born about 1610 in Stotford, Bedfordshire, England. She died about
 1645 in Hartford, Hartford County, Connecticut.
- 327 Nicholas Disborough was born on Jun 16, 1612 in Hartford, Hartford County, Connecticut.
 4. He died on Aug 31, 1683 in Hartford, Hartford County, Connecticut. He married Mary Bronson in 1640 in Hartford, Hartford County, Connecticut.
- Mary Bronson was born in Mar 1623 in Chelmsford, Essex County, England. She died in
 1670 in Hartford, Hartford County, Connecticut.
- Robert King (son of Francis King and Dorothy Aston) was born about 1625 in England. He
 died in 1693 in Stafford County, Virginiia. He married Elizabeth Brooke between
 1650-1668 in Stafford County, Virginia.
- 336 Elizabeth Brooke was born in Norfolk, Virginia.
- 1.
- William Blaise was born about 1675. He died before May 03, 1765 in Middlesex, Virginia.0.
- 341 William Hodges was born in 1670. He married Charity Ramsey.
- 6.

341 Charity Ramsey

- 7.
- 384 George Abney (son of Paul Abney and Maria "Mary" Brooksby) was born about 1613 in
 0. Leichester, England. He died on May 03, 1661 in Leichester, England. He married Bathusa Sleaton.

384 Bathusa Sleaton

1.

Notes for Bathusa Sleaton:

Her will left most of her estate to Dannett, described as her onlyson. She appointed two poor people executors, giving them fiveshillings each. As Dannett was not in England, he never claimed hisinheritance. The Honorable John Rutledge Abney went to England tocheck on this and found it had already been escheated to the crown, and it has been a

family tradition the family were heirs to propertyin England.

Her maiden name has also been spelled "Stratton," as reported to me byMr. Joe B. Abney, Jr. of Austin, Texas in October 2004 by e-mail.

Generation 13

- 512 **John Nason** was born about 1620 in Stratford upon Avon, England. He died in Feb 1685 0. in Stratford upon Avon, England. He married **Eliza**.
- 512 **Eliza** She died in Aug 1683.
- 1.

Notes for John Nason:

John Nason, being born, we think, in 1620, came into the world whenforty-one Pilgrims aboard the Mayflower, anchored off Massachusetts, signed on November 11, 1620, a compact calling for a "bodypolitick," now known as the Mayflower Compact! They insisted uponaccomplishing this agreement prior to setting foot on the new landthey were encourtering.

Source: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mayflower_Compact

- 640 Phillippe Kellogg (son of Thomas Kellogg and Florence Byrd) was born on Sep 15, 1560 in
 0. Bocking, Essex, England. He died on Oct 24, 1583 in Debden, Essex, England. He married
 Annie Annis Minot on Oct 02, 1579 in Brocking, Essex, England.
- Annie Annis Minot was born in 1561 in Brocking, Essex, England. She died in Great
 Leighs, Essex, England.

Notes for Phillippe Kellogg:

"Phillippe Kellogg, first appears in Bocking, Essex County, a parishadjoining Braintree, on 15 September 1583, when his son, Thomas, wasbaptised. Two years later he was in Great Leighs, where his son, Robert, was baptised in 1585, the first time that the name Kelloggappears in the registers of that parish. Baptismal records for all hischildren have not been found, as is shown by the burial of hisunrecorded daughter, Annis, in Great Leighs, on 25 May 1611. Theregisters of Great Leighs exist back to 1558.

"A search of the Court rolls of Great Leighs fails to reveal the nameof Kellogg. No record of his death has been found, and since therecords of Great Leighs are quite full, it is probable that he did notdie there. He may have removed to Braintree and had other children, but the records of Braintree extend no farther back than 1660 and theearliest known date of a Kellogg in Braintree was in 1623, when MosesWoll mentioned Phillippe?s son, Robert, in his will."

Source:http://homepages.rootsweb.com/~legends/kellogg.html#thomas

640 John Bird

2.

- 641 Matthew Webster was born in 1564 in Cossington, Leicestershire County, England. He died
 6. on Sep 13, 1592 in Cossington, Leicestershire County, England. He married Elizabeth
 Ashton on Apr 17, 1587 in Cossington, Leicestershire County, England.
- 641 **Elizabeth Ashton** was born in 1566 in Cossington, Leicestershire County, England. She died in 1593 in Cossington, Leicestershire County, England.

Notes for Matthew Webster:

Matthew was born in 1564, the same year in which it is generallybelieved that English poet and dramatist William Shakespeare was bornon April 23, 1564. Shakespeare died on the same date 52 years later.

Source:http://www.poets.org/poet.php/prmPID/122

- 642 Stephen Hopkins (son of Nicholas Hopkins and Mary Poole) was born on Oct 29, 1581 in
 4. Wortley, Wotton Underedge, Gloucestershire, England. He died in 1644 in Plymouth, Plymouth County, Massasschusetts. He married Constance Dudley.
- 642 **Constance Dudley** was born in 1580 in London, Middlesex County, England. She died in 1610 in London, Middlesex County, England.

Notes for Stephen Hopkins:

Stephen Hopkins is a Mayflower passenger who is my ninth greatgrandfather.

- 644 **William Bradford** (son of William Bradford and Alice Morton) was born about 1559 in
- Austerfield, Yorkshire County, England. He died on Jul 15, 1591 in Austerfield, Yorkshire County, England. He married Alice Hanson (daughter of John Hanson) on Jun 21, 1584 in Austerfield, Yorkshire County, England.
- 644 Alice Hanson (daughter of John Hanson) was born on Dec 18, 1562 in Austerfield,
- 1. Yorkshire County, England. She died on May 23, 1597 in Austerfield, Yorkshire County, England.

Notes for William Bradford:

William fathered his son, William, by a wife whose name is uncertain.We show the name of Alice Hanson as William's wife, but at least onegenealogical reporter indicates Alice is a second wife.(www.journeyback.com/DUNHAM/fam01532.htm). However, he is treated inthis report as if he had only one marriage.

He died when his last child, William (future Govenor of the PlymouthColony) was only two years old.

Notes for Alice Hanson:

On October 19, 1562, the year of Alice's birth, there was the birth ofGeorge Abbot, Archbishop of Canterbury. A recognized leader of theEnglish Calvinists, Abbot also demonstrated Puritan sympathies, andtook a leading part in translating the 1611 King James Version of theBible.

Source:http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/George_Abbot_(Archbishop_of_Canterbury)

Alexander Carpenter (son of William O. Carpenter and Abigail) was born about 1560 in
Wrington, Somersetshire, England. He died in 1612. He married Priscilla Dillen before 1583.

644 Priscilla Dillen

3.

Notes for Alexander Carpenter:

Alexander Carpenter was from Wrington, Somersetshire, England. Hereis a picture of Alexander's family through the channel of hisdaughters.

The Carpenter sisters were the daughters of Alexander Carpenter.Alexander and his family were members of John Robinson's congregationwho moved to Leiden. Three of Alexander's daughters married in Leiden.One of these married daughters died without children but the remainingfour immigrated to Plymouth after 1620 and occupied important positions in the civic life in Plymouth.

Juliana married George Morton, in Leiden in July 1612. Juliana andGeorge and their children arrived in Plymouth in 1623 probably aboardthe Anne. Morton was one of the authors Mourt's Relation the firstaccount of life in Plymouth written to entice Englishmen to settle inPlymouth. George Morton died in 1624 and Juliana married ManassehKempton but had no children by him. In the 1627 cattle division,Juliana, Manasseh, and her children by Morton (Nathaniel, John,Ephraim and Patience) were listed in Bradford's company. Juliana'soldest son Nathaniel was born in Leiden in 1613. In 1647 Nathanielbecame clerk of the Plymouth court, a position he held until his deathin 1685. Throughout his life, Nathaniel held strong opinions thatinfluenced civic life in Plymouth. Juliana died in 1664/5 andNathaniel died in 1685.

After the death of her father Alexander, Mary Carpenter cared of hermother in Leiden. After she died, William and Alice (Carpenter)Bradford wrote to Mary in 1645 asking her to come to Plymouth to livewith them. Mary immigrated to Plymouth but never married.

Alice Carpenter married Edward Southworth in Leiden in 1613. Edwarddied before 1620. After the death of his wife in 1620, WilliamBradford wrote to Alice inviting her to come to Plymouth. She arrivedon the Anne in June 1623 and married Bradford in August 1623. Alice'stwo sons by Southworth, Constant (b 1614/6) and Thomas (b 1616/20),moved to Plymouth in ca 1628 to live in Bradford's home. Three sonswere born to Alice and William Bradford: William, Mercy and Joseph.William later served as assistant to his father.

Agnes married the widower Dr. Samuel Fuller in Leiden in April 1613. They had no children. She died sometime before 1617 and Samuel Fullermarried Bridget Lee in Leiden in 1617. Bridget arrived in America in1623 aboard the Anne. Fuller was a signer of the Mayflower Compact andserved the colony as surgeon, physician and church deacon. Bridget wasthe colony's midwife and thought to be a deaconess as well. Fullerdied in Plymouth before the cattle division in 1627.

Priscilla arrived in Plymouth after the cattle division of 1627. Shemarried William Wright in Plymouth after 1627 but before 1633. Williamarrived in Plymouth on the Fortune in 1621 and assumed leading rolesin Plymouth affairs but unfortunately died in 1633. Priscilla marriedJohn Cooper in 1634. John Cooper's sisters, Ann and Lydia Cooper, married Ephraim and Nathaniel Morton. John and Priscilla moved toScituate where he was constable in 1639. They later moved toBarnstable where he was a deputy in 1642. John's will is dated in1676.

- William Bradford (son of Robert Bradford and Elizabeth Braddourth) was born in 1513 in
 Austerfield, Yorkshire County, England. He died about Jan 09, 1596 in Austerfield, Yorkshire County, England. He married Alice Morton (daughter of William Fox) on Oct 19, 1567 in Austerfield, Yorkshire County, England.
- Alice Morton (daughter of William Fox) was born about 1536 in Austerfield, Blyth, Yorkshire
 County, England. She died about 1600 in Austerfield, Yorkshire County, England.

Notes for William Bradford:

In 1513, the year of William Bradford's birth, Spanish explorer Vasco Nunez de Balboa crossed the Isthmus of Panama on September 25, 1513 to reach the Pacific Ocean. Spanish explorer Juan Ponce de Leon landed in Florida.

Source:http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Vasco_N%C3%BA%C3%B1ez_de_Balboa

http://fcit.usf.edu/Florida/lessons/de_leon/de_leon1.htm

In 1575, William and a Mr. John Hanson were the only subsidiaries in Austerfield, Yorkshire County, England. This is evidenced by their being the only two entries on the tax rolls cited below in theGenealogies of Mayflower Families, page 327.

645 John Hanson

- 0.
- 645 William O. Carpenter (son of John Carpenter and Elizabeth Abigail) was born about 1540
 2. in Delwyne, England. He died in 1590 in England. He married Abigail before 1558 in Delwyne, England.
- 645 Abigail was born in 1532. She died in 1590.
- 3.
- 654 Gerald Spencer (son of Michael Spencer and Elizabeth) was born on May 20, 1576 in
- Edworth, Bedfordshire, England. He died in May 1646 in Stotfold, Bedfordshire, England. He married Alice Whitbread (daughter of John Whitbred and Eleanor Hill) on Nov 10, 1600 in Upper Gravehurst, Bedfordshire, England.
- Alice Whitbread (daughter of John Whitbred and Eleanor Hill) was born about 1578 in
 Upper Gravehurst, Bedfordshire, England. She died about 1646 in Stotfold, Bedfordshire, England.
- 672 Francis King (son of John King and Ann Daniel) was born about 1589 in Chestershire,0. England. He married Dorothy Aston.
- 672 **Dorothy Aston** was born about 1593 in Chestershire, England.
- 1.
- 768 **Paul Abney** (son of Edmund Abney and Catherine Ludlam) was born in Leichester,
- 0. England. He died on Jun 10, 1635 in Leichester, England. He married Maria "Mary" Brooksby.

768 Maria "Mary" Brooksby

1.

Notes for Paul Abney:

Paul's pedigree is recorded in "Herald's Visitation of 1634." This generation of Abney's were living during the days of Shakespeare, the iterary and dramatist of world renown. Surely Paul and Mary were entertained by this famous artist.

Generation 14

- Thomas Kellogg (son of Nicholas Kellogg and Florence Hall) was born in 1521 in Debden,
 Essex, England. He died on Mar 12, 1568 in Bocking, Essex, England. He married
 Florence Byrd.
- 128 **Florence Byrd** was born in 1525. She died on Oct 25, 1587.
- 01.

Notes for Thomas Kellogg:

Thomas Kellogg, my tenth great grandfather, was born during at umultuous time world wide in the church. Martin Luther was excommunicated from the Roman Catholic Church that year on January 3,1521. Martin Luther was declared an outlaw and his writings were banned by the Edict of Worms because of his religious beliefs on May26, 1521. This was partly in retaliation about his public burning of the papal edict on December 10, 1520, demanding that he recant or face excommunication. Thomas came into this world in the year thatPortuguese navigator Ferdinand Magellan reached the Philippines onMarch 16, where he was killed by natives the following month.

Source:http://www.studyworld.com/ferdinand_magellan.htm http://mb-soft.com/believe/txc/luther.htm

"At the Manorial Court of Debden in 1571, he succeeded his mother in possession of the tenement and land called Mondes as appears in the Manorial Court record as follows:

Whereas Florence Kellogge, widow, late wife of Nicholas Kellogge, deceased, held for term of her life, a customary tenement with a house thereon and 10 acres of customary land formerly called Webbs and now called Mondes with a pightel planted with osiers etc., reversion there of after her death to Thomas Kellogge and his heirs as appears by the rool of 5 Edward VI [A.D. 1551]. Now comes the said Thomas and prays to be admitted in reversion and he is so admitted.?

"In Court on 12 May 1568, Thomas surrendered to William Kellogg twoacres of Wymonds. Thomas' wife remains unidentified."

Source:http://homepages.rootsweb.com/~legends/kellogg.html#thomas

- Nicholas Hopkins (son of Stephen Hopkins) was born in 1548 in Norfolk, England. He died
 in 1581 in London, Middlesex County, England. He married Mary Poole.
- Mary Poole was born in 1552 in Norfolk, England. She died in 1581 in London, MiddlesexCounty, England.
- William Bradford (son of Robert Bradford and Elizabeth Braddourth) was born in 1513 in
 Austerfield, Yorkshire County, England. He died about Jan 09, 1596 in Austerfield, Yorkshire County, England. He married Alice Morton (daughter of William Fox) on Oct 19, 1567 in Austerfield, Yorkshire County, England.
- Alice Morton (daughter of William Fox) was born about 1536 in Austerfield, Blyth, Yorkshire
 County, England. She died about 1600 in Austerfield, Yorkshire County, England.

Notes for William Bradford:

In 1513, the year of William Bradford's birth, Spanish explorer Vasco Nunez de Balboa crossed the Isthmus of Panama on September 25, 1513 to reach the Pacific Ocean. Spanish explorer Juan Ponce de Leon landed in Florida.

Source:http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Vasco_N%C3%BA%C3%B1ez_de_Balboa http://fcit.usf.edu/Florida/lessons/de_leon/de_leon1.htm

In 1575, William and a Mr. John Hanson were the only subsidiaries in Austerfield, Yorkshire County, England. This is evidenced by their being the only two entries on the tax rolls cited below in theGenealogies of Mayflower Families, page 327.

128 John Hanson

82.

William O. Carpenter (son of John Carpenter and Elizabeth Abigail) was born about 1540
in Delwyne, England. He died in 1590 in England. He married Abigail before 1558 in

Delwyne, England.

- 128 Abigail was born in 1532. She died in 1590.
- 85.
- 128 Robert Bradford (son of Peter Bradford) was born about 1487 in Weillingley, Tickhill,
- 96. Yorkshire County, England. He died in 1553 in England. He married Elizabeth Braddourth.
- 128 **Elizabeth Braddourth** was born about 1493. She died on Oct 21, 1556 in Tickhill, Yorkshire 97. County, England.

Notes for Robert Bradford:

Robert Bradford is the earliest Bradford for whom we have recorded aBradford presence. Robert is an Englishman who is the great grandfather of William Bradford, the one who was a leader among theMayflower Pilgrims and Governor of the New Plymouth settlement for 33 of the first 35 years of their presence in this New World beginnings.

In the Bible (John 6:31), people following and questioning Jesus cited the fact that their forefathers, out in the wilderness, had been given manna to eat by God. That was about 1,350 years prior to their discussion with Jesus. That length of time is similar as between us today and some 200 years prior to when Robert Bradford lived. It is not often that we think of events that far removed from us today that we cite it in contemporary debate!

Notes for Elizabeth Braddourth:

This wife of Robert Bradford was born, it is thought, in the yearChristopher Columbus returned to Spain, concluding his first voyage tothe Western Hemisphere.

Source:http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Christopher_Columbus#First_voyage

- 128 **William Fox** was born about 1512 in Harworth, Nottinghamshire, England.
- 98.
- 129 **John Carpenter** (son of James Carpenter and James Women) was born about 1494 in
- 04. England. He died about 1540. He married **Elizabeth Abigail**.

129 Elizabeth Abigail

05.

Notes for John Carpenter:

John Carpenter was born, we think, in 1494, just in the year followingthe November 10, 1493 birthday of Martin Luther, leader of theProtestant Reformation, was born in Eisleben, Germany.

Source: http://www.touchet1611.org/Philadelphia.html

- Michael Spencer (son of John Spencer and Anne) was born on May 27, 1531 in Edworth,
 Bedfordshire, England. He died on Nov 18, 1599 in Edworth, Bedfordshire, England. He married Elizabeth.
- 130 **Elizabeth** was born about 1540. She died before Nov 18, 1599.

89.

John Whitbred was born about 1541. He died on Nov 28, 1598. He married Eleanor Hill.90.

- 130 **Eleanor Hill** was born about 1550. She died on Nov 20, 1628.
- 91.
- John King (son of William King and Blanche Mainwaring) was born about 1570 in
 Chestershire, England. He died in 1669. He married Ann Daniel before 1589 in Chestershire, England.
- 134 **Ann Daniel** was born about 1574 in England.
- 41.
- 153 Edmund Abney (son of George Abney and Ellene Wolsley) was born in 1528 in Oadby,
- 60. England. He died in 1604 in Leichester, England. He married **Catherine Ludlam** (daughter of William Ludlam) in 1587 in Leicester, England.

153 Catherine Ludlam

61.

Notes for Edmund Abney:

Edmund settled in Leichester where he was admitted as a freeman in1594 and Councellor in 1599. He served as Lord Mayor of Leichester.

153 George Brooksby

62.

Generation 15

- Nicholas Kellogg (son of Nicholas Kellogg and Audley) was born in 1488 in Debden,
 Essex, England. He died on May 17, 1558 in Debden, Essex, England. He married
- **Florence Hall** (daughter of William Hall and "Florence of Debden" Florence) on Oct 04, 1515 in Debden, Essex, England.
- 256 Florence Hall (daughter of William Hall and "Florence of Debden" Florence) was born in
- 01. 1490 in Debden, Essex, England. She died on Nov 08, 1571 in Debden, Essex, England.

Notes for Nicholas Kellogg:

Nicholas was a comtemporary of Martin Luther (1483 - 1546) who was the famous Roman Catholic priest who sparked the Protestant Reformation's beginnings when he nailed his 95 theses on the doors of the church atWittenberg, Germany on October 31, 1517. The site of this event has been visited by Suzanne and me in 1990. Nicholas, of course, was across the sea over in England.

Gutenberg had just invented the printing press in 1455, so books were a new phenomenon in the day of Nicholas and Martin Luther. England'sJohn Cabot made his discovery of New World lands in 1694. So much was new and ever-changing in the world of that day.

"Where he came from, or if his ancestors had lived for many generations in Essex Co., is not known. He was in Debden, and was a witness to the will of William Hall, his father-in-law, on 4 October1515. In 1525 he and William Kellogg were taxed in the earliest Subsidy Returns for Debden now found. From that time until his death in 1558, his name appears at various times in the tax rolls. The names of all of his children are not known since he did not mention them in his will, and the earliest entries in the parish register are in the year of his death. The Manorial Court Rolls indicate that he had at least two sons, William and Thomas. From the frequency of the name in the registers of Debden, it would seem to have been the home of several Kellogg families, and the similarity of given names of Kellogg's in neighboring parishes a generation later indicates that they were all descended from the

Debden family.

"In the Court of Requests (a court of equity for poor persons), inLondon, a lawsuit was filed against Nicholas Kellogg, which is interesting from the picture it presents of the customs of the period, and it shows the first recorded Kellogg in a favorable light. In 1546, the 38th year of the reign of King Henry VIII, Thomas Colain,or Coleman, complained that Nicholas Kellogg, Robert Write, and William Gardiner, without either right, or color of title, with force and arms, entered the church house in Debden, which he had occupied for twenty years, and expelled him therefrom, and took certain goods and chattels to the value of 20 pounds, and would not allow him to occupy the said messuage, nor deliver to him the said goods and chattels 'to the utter impoverishment of said complainant forever, unless your Highness moved with pity, make some order herein.' He prayed process of Privy Seal against said Kellogg, Write and Gardiner, as 'your orator is a very poor man, and not of habeylyte to pursue any suit against them, commanding them to appear at your Grace's Why at Westminster, there to make answer to the premises.'

"In their answer, the defendants said that the bill of complaint was?most untruly fayned and imagined by the compleynaunt by sinister aydeand amintenance of certain persons, whereof defendants prayed to have remedy and advantage. Furthermore, the messuage mentioned in the bill was the property of the church and the defendants, as church wardens, did demise and lease on 1 June 38th Henry VIII (1546) for seven years to farm the said messuage to the said Nicholas Kellogg, to hold from the feast of St. Michael the Archangel, then following. They denied that they took any of the plaintiff's goods and chattels and said that Nicholas Kellogg, at the time of his entry into the church house, found many possessions belonging to the complainant, at which time said Kellogg 'in presence of divers of his honest neighbors caused an inventory to be made,' so that the said complainant might take and have them without interruption of said defendants or either of them.

"As a witness that they told the truth, Thomas Nutlake, parson of the parish church, in his deposition, quiantly said:

?'Forasmuche as it is a dede of charite to testifye the treuth inmatters of variances whereby all dowghts and Ambyguytes the reyther may be removyed and the right trowth more playnlye may apere and beknowen, I thomas Nutlake, parson of the parish churche of Depden . . . rede a certain copy in wryting of the ordre or decre made in the King's honorable Curt of his Whitall the last Trinite term in his secundeyere of his most gracious reigne which was upon a Sundaye immediately after hye masse whereas I dyd calle Wyllyam Gardyner and NycholasKellogge to here the said wryting redde and the said party sansweryd thay would delyver the sayd goods and the twysdaye next after they desired me to go with them and to meet said Coleman and to deliver said goods, and that day said Coleman did not come while I was there.'

"Nicholas' own testimony completely demolished Coleman?s case:

?'Xvi die Novembris Anno 2 Edward VI [A.D. 1548], Nicholas Kelhoge of the age of iii/xx [three score] saith upon his oath that he was readyat the comying of Colman and would have delyvered the goods demanded but he could get no rowme to put theym not withstandyng that here quyred the parson ther to have had a row me to put the goodes but theparson sayd that he was a besy [mischief maker] he shulh have noohouse ther.'

"The descent of property from William Hall to the son and greatgrandson of Nicholas Kellogg may be traced by the wills of William andAlice Kellogg and the rolls of the Manorial Court of Debden."

Source:http://homepages.rootsweb.com/~legends/kellogg.html#thomas

256 Stephen Hopkins was born about 1518 in Norfolk, England. He died in 1592 in Norfolk,

96. England.

- 257 Robert Bradford (son of Peter Bradford) was born about 1487 in Weillingley, Tickhill,
- 60. Yorkshire County, England. He died in 1553 in England. He married Elizabeth Braddourth.
- Elizabeth Braddourth was born about 1493. She died on Oct 21, 1556 in Tickhill, Yorkshire
 County, England.

Notes for Robert Bradford:

Robert Bradford is the earliest Bradford for whom we have recorded aBradford presence. Robert is an Englishman who is the great grandfather of William Bradford, the one who was a leader among theMayflower Pilgrims and Governor of the New Plymouth settlement for 33 of the first 35 years of their presence in this New World beginnings.

In the Bible (John 6:31), people following and questioning Jesus cited the fact that their forefathers, out in the wilderness, had been given manna to eat by God. That was about 1,350 years prior to their discussion with Jesus. That length of time is similar as between us today and some 200 years prior to when Robert Bradford lived. It is not often that we think of events that far removed from us today that we cite it in contemporary debate!

Notes for Elizabeth Braddourth:

This wife of Robert Bradford was born, it is thought, in the yearChristopher Columbus returned to Spain, concluding his first voyage to the Western Hemisphere.

Source:http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Christopher_Columbus#First_voyage

257 William Fox was born about 1512 in Harworth, Nottinghamshire, England.

62.

- 257 John Carpenter (son of James Carpenter and James Women) was born about 1494 in
- 68. England. He died about 1540. He married Elizabeth Abigail.

257 Elizabeth Abigail

69.

Notes for John Carpenter:

John Carpenter was born, we think, in 1494, just in the year followingthe November 10, 1493 birthday of Martin Luther, leader of theProtestant Reformation, was born in Eisleben, Germany.

Source: http://www.touchet1611.org/Philadelphia.html

- 257 Peter Bradford (son of Robert Bradford) was born about 1460 in Bentley, Arksey, Yorkshire
 92. County, England. He died in 1542 in Bentley, Arksey, Yorkshire County, England. He married an unknown spouse in 1481 in Bentley, Arksey, Yorkshire County, England.
- James Carpenter (son of William Carpenter) was born about 1470. He died in 1503. He
 married James Women.
- **James Women** was born about 1470.
- 09.
- John Spencer (son of John Spencer and "Dale" Christian) was born in 1505 in South Mills,
 Bedfordshire, England. He married Anne.

- Anne was born about 1509 in Edworth, Bedforeshire, England. She died before Jun 16, 1560.
- 268 William King (son of William King and Margaret Ferrers) was born about 1544 in
- 80. Chestershire, England. He died about 1609 in At sea. He married **Blanche Mainwaring**.
- 268 Blanche Mainwaring was born about 1548 in Chestershire, England.
- 81.

Notes for William King:

We understand that Capatin King died in a shipwreck off the coast of England in the English Ship, Diamond.

Source:http://wc.rootsweb.com/cgi-bin/igm.cgi?op=GET&db=tsmith&id=I59870

- 307 George Abney (son of John Abney and "Maria Margaret" Margaret) was born in 1480. He
- 20. died on Mar 01, 1578 in Willesley, England. He married **Ellene Wolsley**.
- 307 Ellene Wolsley She died on Dec 03, 1571 in Willesley, England.

Notes for George Abney:

George was known as George of Willesley Hall, which was in DerbyCounty.

George and Elene are buried together in Willesley Chapel under analabaster slab.

- 307 **William Ludlam** was born in 1528 in Oadby, England. He died in 1602.
- 22.

21.

Generation 16

- 512 **Nicholas Kellogg** was born on Oct 18, 1458 in Debden, Essex, England. He died in England. He married **Audley** in 1486 in Debden, Essex, England.
- 512 **Audley** was born in 1465 in Somerset, England. She died on Sep 01, 1524 in Great 01. Barton, Suffolk, England.

Notes for Nicholas Kellogg:

Englishman Nicholas Kellogg is the earliest ancestor in the Kellogg family line that I have been privileged to research. He is my 12th great grandfather. The family who descended from him are filled with citizenry that would make most all of us proud to be Americans. As you will see, the Kellogg family contributed greatly to the worth, value and success of the American dream and its contribution to freedom and our ability freely to worship God.

In the Bible (John 6:31), people following and questioning Jesus cited the fact that their forefathers, out in the wilderness, had been given manna to eat by God. That was about 1,350 years prior to their discussion with Jesus. That length of time is similar as between us today and some 100 years prior to when Nicholas Kellogg lived. It isnot often that we think of events that far removed from us today that we cite it in contemporary discourse!

512 William Hall was born in 1464 in Debden, Essex, England. He married "Florence of 02. Debden" Florence between 1489-1574 in Debden. Essex, England.

- 512 "Florence of Debden" Florence was born in 1468 in Debden, Essex, England.
- 03.

- 515 Peter Bradford (son of Robert Bradford) was born about 1460 in Bentley, Arksey, Yorkshire
 20. County, England. He died in 1542 in Bentley, Arksey, Yorkshire County, England. He married an unknown spouse in 1481 in Bentley, Arksey, Yorkshire County, England.
- 515 **James Carpenter** (son of William Carpenter) was born about 1470. He died in 1503. He 36. married **James Women**.
- 515 James Women was born about 1470.

37.

- 515 **Robert Bradford** (son of Peter Bradford) was born about 1435 in Bentley, Arksey, Yorkshire 84. County, England. He died in 1523 in Bentley, Arksey, Yorkshire County, England.
- 516 William Carpenter (son of John Carpenter) was born about 1440 in Homme, Herefordshire,
 16. England. He died in 1520 in England.
- 523 John Spencer (son of Robert Spencer) was born about 1482 in South Myles, Bedforeshire,
- 52. England. He died on Feb 05, 1532 in South Myles, Bedforeshire, England. He married **"Dale" Christian**.
- 523 "Dale" Christian was born in 1474 in Cope, Bedforeshire, England. She died about 1538
 53. in Rarvenham, England.

Notes for John Spencer:

John Spencer was born about 1482 at Bryteville Manor of Great Barford, Bedforeshire, England. He was of considerable wealth and properties. A Gentleman of South Myles, Bedforeshire, England, he died January 16 1532. His will probated 05 Feb. 1532.

His will lists properties in Honyden, Eton Barford, Great Barford, Southmylles and Harrold all in Bedforshire.

His first wife was Anne Arnolds. John Spencer married a second time to Christian, maiden name unknown.

John Spencer's probated will states his father as Robert Spencer. His will names 3 children and 1 sister and 2 other Spencer relations.

- 537 William King He married Margaret Ferrers.
- 60.
- 537 Margaret Ferrers
- 61.
- 514 John Abney He died on Dec 01, 1505. He married "Maria Margaret" Margaret.
- 40.
- 614 "Maria Margaret" Margaret
- 41.

Generation 17

103 **Robert Bradford** (son of Peter Bradford) was born about 1435 in Bentley, Arksey, Yorkshire
040. County, England. He died in 1523 in Bentley, Arksey, Yorkshire County, England.

Ancestors of Mark Andrew Jumper

- 103 **William Carpenter** (son of John Carpenter) was born about 1440 in Homme, Herefordshire, 072. England. He died in 1520 in England.
- 103 **Peter Bradford** was born about 1415 in England. He died in England.
- 168.
- 103 **John Carpenter** (son of John Carpenter and Catherine) was born about 1405 in England.
- 232. He died between 1476-1480 in Homme, Hertfordshire, England.
- 104 **Robert Spencer** (son of Robert Spencer) was born in 1460.
- 704.
- 107 **Thomas King** He married **Johanna Beauchamp**.

520.

- 107 Johanna Beauchamp
- 521.
- 122 William Abney
- 880.

Generation 18

- 206 **Peter Bradford** was born about 1415 in England. He died in England.
- 080.
- **John Carpenter** (son of John Carpenter and Catherine) was born about 1405 in England. He died between 1476-1480 in Homme, Hertfordshire, England.
- John Carpenter (son of Richard Carpenter and Christina) was born about 1370 in England.
 He died in 1441 in England. He married Catherine.
- 206 Catherine
- 465.
- 209 Robert Spencer was born in 1455.
- 408.
- 215 John King
- 040.
- **John Abney** He married **De Ingwardby** (daughter of William de Ingwardby) about 1419. 760.
- 245 De Ingwardby
- 761.

Generation 19

- 412 John Carpenter (son of Richard Carpenter and Christina) was born about 1370 in England.
- 288. He died in 1441 in England. He married **Catherine**.
- 412 Catherine
- 289.

- 412 Richard Carpenter (son of Jean "John" Le Carpenter and Jean Carpentiers Woman) was
- 928. born in 1335 in England. He died about 1395 in England. He married **Christina**.
- 412 **Christina** was born in 1337. She died in England.
- 929.
- 430 Ralph King
- 080.
- 491 William Abney
- 520.
- 491 William de Ingwardby
- 522.

Generation 20

- 824 **Richard Carpenter** (son of Jean "John" Le Carpenter and Jean Carpentiers Woman) was
- 576. born in 1335 in England. He died about 1395 in England. He married **Christina**.
- 824 **Christina** was born in 1337. She died in England.
- 577.
- 325 Jean "John" Le Carpenter (son of Maurice Carpentier and Margaret) was born between
- 856. 1303-1305 in de Grand Pont, Du Nord, France. He died after 1345 in Dilwyne, Herefordshire, England. He married **Jean Carpentiers Woman**.
- **Jean Carpentiers Woman** was born between 1305-1313 in Dilwyne, Herefordshire, 857. England.
- **John King** He married **Agnes Mortimer** in Queen's Chapel, Reading, Berkshire, England. 160.
- 860 **Agnes Mortimer** was born in 1372.
- 161.

Notes for John King:

Englishman John King is my 15th great grandfather. The trail thisKing line follows to me goes through the Simons family, through mypaternal grandmother Sharpe.

983 John de Abney

040.

Generation 21

- 164 Jean "John" Le Carpenter (son of Maurice Carpentier and Margaret) was born between
- 915 1303-1305 in de Grand Pont, Du Nord, France. He died after 1345 in Dilwyne,
- 2. Herefordshire, England. He married Jean Carpentiers Woman.
- 164 Jean Carpentiers Woman was born between 1305-1313 in Dilwyne, Herefordshire,
- 915 England.
- 3.
- 165 Maurice Carpentier (son of Jean LeCarpenter and Jean) was born in 1240 in Ypres, West

171 Vlaanderen, Belgium. He died in 1337 in Gloucestershire, England. He married Margaret.2.

165 Margaret

171

3. Notes for Maurice Carpentier:

Maurice is my 17th great grandfather. Estimates of his birth in Belgium are about 1240. We're told he died in Gloucestershire, England in 1337. We question those dates, as it seems unusual for a person to live to the age of 97 in those days.

196 William Abney

608

0.

Generation 22

329 Maurice Carpentier (son of Jean LeCarpenter and Jean) was born in 1240 in Ypres, West

- 830 Vlaanderen, Belgium. He died in 1337 in Gloucestershire, England. He married **Margaret**.
- 4.

329 Margaret

- 830
- 5. Notes for Maurice Carpentier:

Maurice is my 17th great grandfather. Estimates of his birth in Belgium are about 1240. We're told he died in Gloucestershire, England in 1337. We question those dates, as it seems unusual for a person to live to the age of 97 in those days.

330 Jean LeCarpenter was born about 1220. He married Jean.

342

- 4.
- **Jean** was born in Belgium. She died in 1250.
- 342
- 5. Notes for Jean LeCarpenter:

Jean LeCarpenter is my 18th great grandfather, heading up some 23 generations for which my files have records. Beginning with his son, apparently the surname became simply Carpenter.

Many of these descendants read like a whose who list later in American history, including Presidents of the United States.

Unfortunately, we have no narratives about Jean's life. Having indication that his son, Maurice, as born about 1240, we're estimating Jean's birth at about 1220.

His country is assumed to be Belgium, because we have indication that his son, Maurice, was born in 1240 in Belgium, but Maurice died in 1337 in Gloucestershire, England. We question those dates, as it seems unusual for a person to live to the age of 97 in those days.

393 William Abney

216

0.

Generation 23

Jean LeCarpenter was born about 1220. He married **Jean**.

660 8.

659 Jean was born in Belgium. She died in 1250.

660

9. Notes for Jean LeCarpenter:

Jean LeCarpenter is my 18th great grandfather, heading up some 23 generations for which my files have records. Beginning with his son, apparently the surname became simply Carpenter.

Many of these descendants read like a whose who list later in American history, including Presidents of the United States.

Unfortunately, we have no narratives about Jean's life. Having indication that his son, Maurice, as born about 1240, we're estimating Jean's birth at about 1220.

His country is assumed to be Belgium, because we have indication that his son, Maurice, was born in 1240 in Belgium, but Maurice died in 1337 in Gloucestershire, England. We question those dates, as it seems unusual for a person to live to the age of 97 in those days.

786 William Albini of Abney

432 0.

Generation 24

- 157 **Robert Albini** (son of William Albini of "Capilanus" Abney and Agnes de Meysam) was born
- in 1216. He died in 1286. He married **Eustacia de Fancourt** (daughter of Gerald de
- 40. Fancourt) in 1238.
- 157 Eustacia de Fancourt
- 286
- 41. Notes for Robert Albini:

Robert was Lord of Hungerton and Wiwell.

Generation 25

- 314 William Albini of "Capilanus" Abney He married Agnes de Meysam.
- 572

80.

314 Agnes de Meysam

- 572
- 81. Notes for William Albini of "Capilanus" Abney:

William was Lord of Hungerton and Wiwell. He joined with JohnFitzherbert for 4 carcauts on land in Norbury and Rossington in 4 John(1203). He was granted a culture of land by John Fitzherbert in 34henry III (1350).

314 Gerald de Fancourt

572 82.

Generation 26

629 Robert Albini He died in 1205.

145

60.

Generation 27

125 William Albini He married Cecelia Bigod.

829 120.

- 125 Cecelia Bigod
- 829
- 121. Notes for William Albini:

William was called "primus" in the Belvoir Charters. He held le Meschin and half of Stockhorn. He acquired South Perthton in Somersetshire by marriage.

Notes for Cecelia Bigod:

Cecelia was heiress of Belvoir. She held Roger le Courcel's Manor of South Perthton as the gift of King Henry I.

Generation 28

- 251 William "Brito" Albini
- 658
- 240.

Generation 29

503 William Albini He married Adelica.

316

480.

503 Adelica

- 316
- 481. Notes for William Albini:

He settled at Dol in Brittany. He was pincerna of King William I. He married first the Sister of Grimold de Flesis. He is the sixth cousin to King William. Another place indicates his role with King William was to be his Le Botellier or his butler.

Generation 30

100 Neil "Nigel" de St. Sauveur He married	Adela.
--	--------

- 663
- 296
- 0.

100 Adela

663

296 Notes for Neil "Nigel" de St. Sauveur:

1.

Neil succeeded to his father's estates in 1040 as Viscount of theCotentin. He revolted with other barons against Duke William ofNormandy in 047. He was banished by the Duke and settled atd'Aubigney in Brittany. Later, he was pardoned and the estates wererestored.

Generation 31

201 Nigel "Neil" de St. Sauveur He married Helena.
326
592
0.
201 Helena
326
592
1.

Generation 32

Roger de St. Sauveur (son of "Nigel" Neil) was born about 945 AD in Saint-Sauveur, Ouillyle-Vicomte, Basse-Normandie, France. He died in 1014 in St Sauveur, Manche, Basse-Normandie, France.

Generation 33

"Nigel" Neil

Generation 34

Richard de St. Sauveur

Generation 35

Malahulc "Halduc de Tresney" Eysteinsson (son of Eystein Glumra "The Noisy" lvarsson and Aseda Rognvaldsdatter) was born about 845 AD in Maer, Nord Trondelag, Norway.

Generation 36

Eystein Glumra "The Noisy" Ivarsson (son of Ivar "Jarl" Halfdansson and Eysteinsdatter) was born in 788 AD in Maer, Nord Trondelag, Norway. He died about 872 AD in Norway. He married **Aseda Rognvaldsdatter**.

1. **Aseda Rognvaldsdatter** (daughter of Rangwald) was born about 804 AD in Maer, Nord Trondelag, Norway.

Notes for Eystein Glumra "The Noisy" Ivarsson:

Eystein Glumra Ivarsson was Earl or Jarl of the Uplands about the year810 AD. Eystein is the ancestor the Abney's have in common with the line of William the Conqueror. He is Williams's sixth great grandfather and my 32nd great grandfather. Eystein's title is Earl of Hendemarken. He was known as `the Noisy,' possibly an aka for Eyesteinof ORKNEY

Source:http://freepages.genealogy.rootsweb.com/~jamesdow/s052/f280253.htm

Eystein Glumra Ivarsson is the 25th great grandfather of the first President of the United States, General George Washington. He is the 29th great grandfather of President Abraham Lincoln. Glumra Ivarsson is my 32nd great grandfather.

Eystein Glumra lvarsson is the ancestor in common between my daughter, Tiffany Lenn Sharpe Westmoreland and her husband, Steven O.Westmoreland. They are related to each other as 34th cousins, four times removed, as well as by husband and wife status.

Generation 37

Ivar "Jarl" Halfdansson (son of Halfdan Vanha "Haldan the Old" Sveidasson) was born in Oppland, Norway. He married **Eysteinsdatter** in Oppland, Norway.

1. **Eysteinsdatter** was born about 785 AD in Trondeim, Norway.

Notes for Ivar "Jarl" Halfdansson:

Ivar "the Great" was Jarl of the Uplands. He was living around 800,but we do not have birth and death dates on him. He is mythirty-third great grandfather.

2. Rangwald

Generation 38

Halfdan Vanha "Haldan the Old" Sveidasson (son of Sveidi "Sea King" Svidrasson) was born about 750 AD in Norway.

Generation 39

Sveidi "Sea King" Svidrasson (son of Svidri "Sea King" Heytsson) was born in Raumsdal, Telemark, Norway.

Generation 40

Svidri "Sea King" Heytsson (son of Heiti Gorsson) was born in Raumsdal, Telemark, Norway.

Generation 41

Heiti Gorsson (son of Gor "Sea King" Thorrasson) was born in Raumsdal, Telemark, Norway.

Generation 42

Gor "Sea King" Thorrasson was born about 400 AD in Kvenland, Finland.

Prepared By:			
Preparer:	Dwight (D. A.) Albert Sharpe	Address:	805 Derting Road East
Phone:	817-504-6508		Aurora, TX 76078-3712
Email:	da@dasharpe.com		USA